THE STANDARD EDITION
OF THE COMPLETE PSYCHOLOGICAL WORKS OF
SIGMUND FREUD
Translated from the German under the General Editorship of
JAMES STRACHEY
In Collaboration with
ANNA FREUD
Assisted by
ALIX STRACHEY and ALAN TYSON

VOLUME XVII
(1917-1919)

An Infantile Neurosis

LONDON
THE HOGARTH PRESS
AND THE INSTITUTE OF PSYCHO-ANALYSIS

Aus der Geschichte
einer infantilen Neurose
[»Der Wolfsmann«]}

Sigm. Freud

Studienausgabe
BAND VIII
I have used the Standard Edition, Vol. XVII, for the English text and the Studienausgabe, Vol. VIII for the German text as it has some of Strachey's footnotes translated into German, and is well known for being a more accurate version of the text than the Gesammelte Werke.

This bilingual edition for me marks the fact that, to date, I have created bilingual texts for about two thirds of The Standard Edition. I never would have dreamed that this would be possible nor would I have thought it so important, if it were not for the fact that throughout Lacan's writings and Seminars, he not only quotes Freud in the original German but urges us to return to the original text of Freud in German!

It might be of interest to notice that on page 120 of the English text, in the last sentence of the first paragraph, Freud uses the German term "weitgehenden instinktiven Wissen der Tiere zur Verfügung" (far-reaching instinctive knowledge of animals) and in the second paragraph, he uses the term, "instinktiven Besitz" (instinctive endowment); "Dieses Instinktive wären der Kern des Unbewussten" (This instinctive factor would then be the nucleus of the unconscious); "Die Verdrängung wäre die Rückkehr zu dieser instinktiven Stufe" (Repression would be the return to this instinctive stage); "der instinktartigen Vorstufe" (instinct-like preliminary stages).

Besides the "instinctive knowledge of animals" at the end of the first paragraph, these last four instances (instance=instinct?) in the second paragraph in the case of the Wolfman are among the only handful of times in all of Freud's work that he uses the term Instinkt. Could one substitute the word 'Trieb' or 'triebmässig' in these last four examples? And, if so, does it not prove that Freud, rather than being a robot, was sometimes inconsistent? That is, he had an unconscious.

The total number of times that Freud uses the term 'instinct' throughout his work are the following: Instinkt-8; Instinktausserung-1; Instinkte-8; Instinkten-4; instinktgemäss-1; instinktiv-6; instinktive-8; instinktiven-5; instinktives-1; Instinktleben-1; instinktmässig-1; Instinks-2.

As we read Freud's text we might often find ourselves wondering not only what the German phrase for what one is reading in English might be but perhaps what the actual Russian word or phrase that the Wolfman might have employed was. I do not have to remind the reader that Freud's patient was born and raised in Russia and, further, that since he came from an
extremely wealthy Russian family he might not have used the Russian language at all, as many wealthy Russians were using French or German as their preferred language for conversing.

Assuming that he did know and use some Russian, I have attempted to provide a small glossary of a few Russian words that might be pertinent to the reading of this text.

Peter Mahoney mentions in his book, *The Cries of the Wolfman* that there some similarities between the Sergei Pankeyef and Sigmund Freud. One is that their initials are similar, to quote Lila Kalinich from *Lacan and the Subject of Language*, “Further, the Espe (S.P.) of the Wespe dream contains a reversal of the initials of Professor Sigmund, founder of psychoanalysis. Mahoney’s elaboration of this idea is both extensive and impressive.” Another feature that they have in common is that they were both born with a caul.

As for the famous work on the Wolfman by Nicholas Abraham and Maria Torok, *The Wolf Man’s Magic Word: A Cryptonymy*, originally published in French, in 1976, I would like to say that as brilliant as that book sometimes appears to be, that the authors might have taken the idea of using multi-linguistic puns (German-Russian-English) to show various hidden meanings encrypted in the text from the 1962 book of Anthony Burgess, *A Clockwork Orange*, where the gang of Cockney young men are using a lot of Russian words in their conversation. The result is a lot of punning of the ‘Khorosho=horror show’ variety. (Khorosho is the Russian word for good, fine, well). And I am afraid that a lot of the examples of Abraham and Torok are of this ‘khorosho=horror show’ variety. Being a bad punster myself, I have had no trouble in recognizing this.

As I have gotten more into the loop of the Wolfman text, three questions have occurred to me. We might ask ourselves how his patronym is written in the Russian Cyrillic alphabet. It turns out the his full name is written in Cyrillic as

Сергей Константинович Панкеев
Which when pronounced would sound something like:

sergay konstantinovich pankeyef

A second and similar question occurs to me: what are the first names of Sergei’s parents? In the literature on this case, members of his extended family are named, and according to a recent Wikipedia article his father's name was Konstantin but his mother's name is never mentioned. The relevance of this can be seen on page 90, where Freud writes that “he must have had a nursery maid who was very fond of him. Her name had been the same as his mother’s.”
The third question is perhaps the most important: what is the clinical structure of the Wolf man? Was he neurotic, psychotic, or perverse? The question clinicians might ask today is likely different: was he neurotic, borderline, or psychotic?

I am of the personal opinion that he was neurotic with psychotic-like transient episodes. In order for a diagnosis of psychosis to be made there has to be: the foreclosure of the Name-of-the-Father, some disorder of language like a neologism, and maybe a lack of capability of transference. However, Lacan in Seminar III makes a very good case for the Wolfman being psychotic and he refers to Freud and the Wolfman, in Seminar XI (page 54), by saying: “we can today ask ourselves whether this fever, this presence, this desire of Freud is not that which, in his patient, might have conditioned the belated accident of his psychosis”.

A well-known psychoanalyst mentioned in a seminar once that the “Wolfman had foreclosed castration, but not the Name-of-the-Father”. At this point, I am not sure what that means. At any rate, part of this question hinges on the use in this text and in Freud’s other texts of the German word verwerfen which means to reject, to turn down, to discard, literally or to throw away in a very strong sense, something like to “foreclose”. I have enclosed here from the Konkordanz zu den Gesammelten Werke von Sigmund Freud, a list of all of the times where Freud used the term verwerfen.

Another question might be concerning the Roman numeral V. There is no ‘V’ as such in the Cyrillic alphabet. The Cyrillic alphabet uses the letter B to represent that phoneme. And yet the letter ‘V’ continues to play an important part in this case. After all, nature provides us with signifiers. And from these signifiers, we create the letters of the alphabet, which in turn are sometimes used to re-signify nature.

An interesting parallel to the Wolfman is another Russian nobleman, Vladimir Valdimirovich Nabokov who had a strange and continuous anti-Freudian bias, as if he had identified with the Wolfman with his interest in butterflies, and as if he were afraid that Freud might be able to read his thoughts or at least capture him in his butterfly net.

Contextually, there is also the fact that Europe was later plagued for thirteen years by another ‘noble’ Wolfman (Adolf means “noble wolf”). Adolf, this not so noble wolf, is of course responsible for slaughtering people as if they were sheep. And what sign did Churchill flash to fight and respond to Adolf? Raising his first two fingers, he offered a ‘V’ for victory to those who fought off this wolf, or is it the Roman numeral V, or perhaps a sign for five o’clock in the afternoon?
Since I can't bring you a photo or a drawing of Sergei's primal scene, I have included a copy of a very beautiful print from Krilov's Fables.

Ivan Andreyevich Krylov (Иван Андреевич Крылов) (February 13, 1769 – November 21, 1844) is Russia's best known fabulist. While many of his earlier fables were loosely based on Aesop's and La Fontaine's, later fables were original work, often satirizing the incompetent bureaucracy that was stifling social progress in his time.

Richard G. Klein
Spring 2013
New York City
ВОЛКИ И ОВЦЫ

THE WOLVES AND THE SHEEP
VERWERF (8)
oder andersartig—gibt. Er verwarf das Neue—in unserem
zu entfernen, er verwarf die Bedeutung der
gemacht werden sollte. Ich verwarf natürlich diese
ersten großen Mißerfolg verwarf sie ihre Weltlichkeit
uns bekannt geworden. Er verwarf sie und blieb auf dem
dich gesagt habe, daß er sie verwarf, so ist die nächste
Zeit, die Lehre des Moses verwarf und ihn selbst
dann er dann wieder verwarf, weil er seine beiden

VERWARFEN (2)
Kranken selbst als unrichtig verwarf. Das Drangen
psychoanalytische Therapie verwarfen, ohne einen Ersatz
richtig verwarf als absurd verwarf, daB auch der
Möglichkeit nicht als absurd verwarf, daß auch der bei
unserer Einführung verwarf; der Verwendung
unsere einzusetzen, die Sie verwarf.* Dies wird offenbar
zu machen, anstatt sie zu verwerfen. Es ist kein Verdienst
meiner Erwartung mußte ich verwarf; ich meine jetzt, es
zu unverlässig zu verwerfen ist. Stelk fand seine
die Nachahmung der „Alten“ verwerfen lehrte und immer
des großen Mannes verwerfen, mag man es für
man bald als unzulänglich verwerfen muß; auf anderen
unbegründete Anmaßung verwerfen muß. Ich meine also,
den Anfang sind sie ganz zu verwerfen. Schon durch kurze
Sie weder glauben noch verwerfen. Sie sollen anhören
Verhältnissen inadäquat zu verwerfen. Sollen wir aber bei
statuieren haben, zu verwerfen und sie alle unter
nichts enthielt, was heute zu verwerfen wäre. Der
uns brauchbar scheint, zu verwerfen, was uns nicht taucht,
und sie unbedenklich verwerfen, wo sie uns
eines Volkes leichtfertig verwerfen würde. Allen
Untersuchung nicht darum verwerfen würden, weil es am
die Schreibfläche selbst verwerfen zu müssen. Der
diese Bezeichnung zu verwerfen. Zwei

VERWERFEN (26)
ohne eigene Erfahrung zu verwerfen. Andere, die sich
er begrüßt sich damit zu verwerfen, auch ehe er
ich nicht ohne Rechenschaft verwerfen darf. Sie legt mir
Möglichkeit nicht als absurd verwarf, daß auch der bei
des Traumes zur Zukunft verwarf, denn nach
als eine fahrlässige zu verwerfen. Der Arzt soll
obigen Text Enthalten zu verwerfen; der Veröffentlich
unsere einzusetzen, die Sie verwarf. Dies wird offenbar
zu machen, anstatt sie zu verwerfen. Es ist kein Verdienst
meiner Erwartung mußte ich verwarf; ich meine jetzt, es
zu unverlässig zu verwerfen ist. Stelk fand seine
die Nachahmung der „Alten“ verwerfen lehrte und immer
des großen Mannes verwerfen, mag man es für
man bald als unzulänglich verwerfen muß; auf anderen
unbegründete Anmaßung verwerfen muß. Ich meine also,
den Anfang sind sie ganz zu verwerfen. Schon durch kurze
Sie weder glauben noch verwerfen. Sie sollen anhören
Verhältnissen inadäquat zu verwerfen. Sollen wir aber bei
statuieren haben, zu verwerfen und sie alle unter
nichts enthielt, was heute zu verwerfen wäre. Der
uns brauchbar scheint, zu verwerfen, was uns nicht taucht,
und sie unbedenklich verwerfen, wo sie uns
eines Volkes leichtfertig verwerfen würde. Allen
Untersuchung nicht darum verwerfen würden, weil es am
die Schreibfläche selbst verwerfen zu müssen. Der
diese Bezeichnung zu verwerfen. Zwei

VERWERFENDE (1)
an das Symbol für alles zu Verwerfende, vom Leben

VERWERFELICH (14)
da zu locker, kein Witz zu verwerflich, als daß er nicht die
man das Böse bereits als verwerflich, als von der
sie sich ethisch verwerflich, da sie die
und moralisch verwerflich, er macht sich
nur überflüssig, nicht verwerflich finden können. Der
die Analyse solcher Fälle verwerflich ist, weil sie
ekelhaft, abscheulich und verwerflich machen sollen. Eine
abstoßend, moralisch verwerflich oder als gefährlich
däß Vorurteile nicht immer verwerflich sind, daß sie
mehr unzweckmäßig und verwerflich. Sind sie
sei überhaupt verwerflich und gänzlich außer
übertrumpeln, sind technisch verwerflich und strafen sich
können, allein das sei nur verwerflich, wenn auch die
sein, aber sie sind praktisch verwerflich, wie sich

VERWERFELICHE (1)
vielleicht die Suggestion das Verwerfliche, die

VERWERFELICHEN (3)
müsste, denn all diese verwerflichen Regungen
müße, denn all diese verwerflichen Regungen

VERWERFELICHER (2)
eigene Träume von solch verwerflicher Art sie nicht an

VERWERFELICHES (1)
ich finde nur nichts Verwerfliches darin, wenn ein

VERWERFT (1)
weil ihr zu früh verwerft und zu strenges sondert
VERWERFUNG (30)

ist etwas anderes als eine Verwerfung,

wenn man sie, in deren Verwerfung alle Menschen
lassen wollte durch die Verwerfung aller
oder man erkennt seine Verwerfung als zu Recht
diese Beachtung durch Verwerfung als bald wieder
und das ich zu ihrer Verwerfung angeregt. Wir
der Hysterie so häufig zur Verwerfung ätiologischer
sich erfüllte. Häßliche, der Verwerfung bei Tag sichere
der verächtlichen Verwerfung bereits seine
Wahrnehmung von der Verwerfung bestimmt in uns
ein anderer Grund zu deren Verwerfung. Das Thema, auf
nicht genügend für eine Verwerfung. Denn das tiefe
als die Großen. Mit einer Verwerfung der Angaben
Diese selbst erst mit meiner Verwerfung der hypnotischen
denn am Platze, gegen eine Verwerfung der Lehre

Seit der Verwerfung der mythologischen
die in Annahme oder Verwerfung des damals
einzigen Gottes sowie die Verwerfung des magisch
nämlich die Motivierung der Verwerfung. Diesem
mit der Überwindung und Verwerfung dieser deutlich
träfe, er begründet sich mit der Verwerfung dieser Produkte,
mit Bewußtsein erfolgte Verwerfung durch das Urteil,
Wissenschaft in ihrer Verwerfung einig.

Tage aufgetaucht sein, aber Verwerfung gefunden haben;
über Annahme und Verwerfung herbeiführt. Die
unterliegen kann, die wir Verwerfung oder Verurteilung
liegt aber darauf, daß diese Verwerfung sich auf nichts
Vorgänge von Auswahl, Verwerfung und Entscheidung,
Denkbemühung dann ihre Verwerfung und ihr Vergessen
Prüfung, Bestätigung oder Verwerfung wartet. Wir

VERWERFUNGsurteil (1)

her weiß ich, wie ein solches Verwerfungsurteil zu deuten ist.
LEXICON OF RUSSIAN WORDS RELATED TO FREUD'S 'WOLFMAN' CASE
Compiled by Richard G. Klein

I am aware that there are differences in the Cyrillic alphabet before the revolution of 1917 and after it. I have for the sake of convenience used the post-1917 Cyrillic alphabet for now.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Russian</th>
<th>German</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Бабушка babushka</td>
<td>Grossmutter</td>
<td>grandmother, granny</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Babotchka babotchka</td>
<td>Schmetterling</td>
<td>butterfly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Бог—Govno Бог—govno Бог—Germo</td>
<td>Gott—Dreck</td>
<td>God—shit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bog—Svinя Bog—svinya</td>
<td>Gott—Schwein</td>
<td>God—pig</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Volk</td>
<td>Wolf</td>
<td>wolf</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grusha Grusha</td>
<td>Birne</td>
<td>pear &amp; his nursery maid’s name</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>День Рождества День розхеста</td>
<td>Weihnachtstag</td>
<td>Christmas Day</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dux</td>
<td>Hauch, Geist</td>
<td>breath, spirit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Гречкий Орех дерево Gretzkii orex derevo орехового дерева</td>
<td>Nussbaum Page 29</td>
<td>walnut tree</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Желтая полоса Zheltaya polosa</td>
<td>Gelbgestreitten</td>
<td>yellow stripe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Лисы</td>
<td>Füchse</td>
<td>foxes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>----------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lisi</td>
<td>Page 29</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Матрона</th>
<th>Matrona</th>
<th>Matrona, name of peasant woman</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>matrona</td>
<td>Page 91</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Махаон</th>
<th>Schwalbenschwanz</th>
<th>swallow-tail (butterfly)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>maxaon</td>
<td>Pages 16, 88</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>небольшой хвост</th>
<th>Schwänzchen</th>
<th>Little tail</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>nibolshoi xvost</td>
<td>Page 19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Няня</th>
<th>Nanja</th>
<th>nanny</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>пьяnya</td>
<td>Page 17</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Овца</th>
<th>Schafen</th>
<th>sheep</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>oftsa</td>
<td>Page 30</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Оса</th>
<th>Wespe</th>
<th>wasp</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>osa</td>
<td>Espe=S.P.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Page 94</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Отьца</th>
<th>n.a.</th>
<th>father (accusative and genitive singular of Отец) otets</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>оtsa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Родиться в сорочке</th>
<th>In einer “Glückshaube“ zur Welt gekommen sei.</th>
<th>born with a caul</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Roditsya v sorochka</td>
<td>Page 99</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Родился в рубашке</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Рождественская ёлка</th>
<th>Weihnachtsbaum</th>
<th>Christmas tree</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Rozhdestvenskaya yolka</td>
<td>Pages 35-36</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Рождественский подарок</th>
<th>Weihnachtsgeschenken</th>
<th>Christmas present</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Rozhdestvenskii padarok</td>
<td>Page 36</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
It is hard to decide what terms to include here. I might have left some important ones out.

To the best of my knowledge, there is not a Russian word for 'Wolfman'. However, it was Freud who gave him this name anyway (Der Wolfsmann). For some words, it appears that the Wolfman might have given Freud the actual Russian word for some of the terms.

As a result of this lexicon, one may see that even though Freud states on page 89 that there is a type of butterfly, which in Russian, is known as a 'granney' there is a difference between, babushka (grandmother) and babotchka (butterfly). Whether these two phonemes are merged sometimes for a Russian native speaker is yet to be determined.

One could speculate that there are a series of words with the same phonemes appearing in them: 'grusha-babushka'; ‘Serozh-sorochka'; ‘matron-machaon’ and “Bog” (God) is the reverse spelling of “Gov-no” etc. The yellow stripes are a common characteristic of: the butterfly, a Granny (babotcha/babushka)—the pear(grusha) and the osa(wasp) and the piece of clothing that Freud suggested (see page 89).

An interesting observation on the Wolfman was made by Lila Kalinich who wrote an article, Where is Thy Sting?, in The Subject of Language edited by Elie Ragland is, that if one takes the dream he had with the wasp, the Wespe, and one moves the letters around from the word ‘WESPE’, making the anagram ‘SEPEW’, then one ends up with something very much resembling his name in the Cyrillic alphabet, that is, Sepew=Cepē<x (Serozh is the diminutive of Sergei).

In other words, if you take into account that the ‘C’ in the Cyrillic alphabet is equivalent to an ‘S’ in the Roman alphabet (C is also the uppermost part of an S) and, if you make an allowance for ‘<x’ in the Cyrillic alphabet for the Roman alphabet ‘w’ (The Roman alphabet had no ‘W’ but the ISO Latin Alphabet has a ‘W’, as well as P in the Cyrillic alphabet is the equivalent of an R in the Roman alphabet.
The following table illustrates the transformation.
We start with the German word ‘Wespe’ and give each letter its graphic equivalent in the Cyrillic alphabet.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Latin</th>
<th>Cyrillic</th>
<th>Phonetic sound in Russian</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>W</td>
<td>Ж (equivalent in graphic form)</td>
<td>zh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>е</td>
<td>o</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s</td>
<td>с</td>
<td>s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p</td>
<td>п</td>
<td>r</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>е</td>
<td>e</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

We then re-arrange the equivalent Cyrillic letters that spell ‘Wespe’ (ж е с п е) to spell Сепёж (Serozh).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Latin</th>
<th>Cyrillic</th>
<th>Phonetic sound in Russian</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>s</td>
<td>с</td>
<td>s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>е</td>
<td>e</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p</td>
<td>п</td>
<td>r</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>е</td>
<td>ё</td>
<td>o</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>W</td>
<td>Ж</td>
<td>zh</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

So, strictly on the level of the letter, ‘Wespe’ is an anagram of Sepew=Сепёж (Serozh)—the diminuitive of Sergei.
FREUD’S WOLFMAN CASE, A CHRONOLOGY

The words in purple indicate direct quotes from Freud’s chronology at the end of the case, *From the History of an Infantile Neurosis* in the S.E. XVII, page 121.

“1 (Footnote added 1923:) I will once more set out here the chronology of the events mentioned in this case history.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Event</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Dec 25</td>
<td>1886</td>
<td>Born on Christmas Day. M. Gardner p. 4, SP states that he was born on Christmas Eve 1886 (Julian calendar)=January 6, 1887 (Gregorian calendar). There is a 13 day difference between the two.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jun 24</td>
<td>1887</td>
<td>1 1/2 Malaria. Observation of his parents copulating; or observation of them when they were together, into which he later introduced a phantasy of them copulating.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jun 24</td>
<td>1888</td>
<td>Just before 2 1/2 Scene with Grusha.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jun 24</td>
<td>1888</td>
<td>2 1/2 Screen memory of his parents’ departure with his sister. This showed him alone with his Nanya and so disowned Grusha and his sister.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mar 1889</td>
<td>Before 3 1/4 His mother’s lament to the doctor.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mar 24</td>
<td>1889</td>
<td>3 1/4 Beginning of his seduction by his sister. Soon afterwards the threat of castration from his Nanya.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jun 24</td>
<td>1889</td>
<td>3 1/2 The English governess. Beginning of the change in his character.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dec 24</td>
<td>1890</td>
<td>4 The wolf dream. Origin of the phobia.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jun 24</td>
<td>1890</td>
<td>4 1/2 Influence of the Bible story. Appearance of the obsessional symptoms.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dec</td>
<td>1891</td>
<td>Just before 5 Hallucination of the loss of his finger.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dec 24</td>
<td>1891</td>
<td>5 Departure from the first estate.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1892</td>
<td>After 6</td>
<td>Visit to his sick father [compulsion to breathe out].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1894-1896</td>
<td></td>
<td>8 to 10 Final outbreaks of the obsessional neurosis.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1903</td>
<td>[17]</td>
<td>Breakdown, precipitated by gonorrhea.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feb</td>
<td>1910</td>
<td>23 Began analysis. According the Editor’s Note S.E.XVII, p.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jul 14</td>
<td>1914</td>
<td>27 Ends analysis with Freud. Re: Patrick Mahoney, p. 17</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| Oct-of | 1914 | 27 Freud “began writing the case history in October of the same year and finished it in early
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Event</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nov</td>
<td>1918</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Apr</td>
<td>1920</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oct</td>
<td>1926</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feb</td>
<td>1927</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1929</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>Begins irregular analysis with Ruth Mack Brunswick extending over several years. Re: Patrick Mahoney, p. 17</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

[The dates of the following events are not exactly established
Between primal scene (1 ½) and seduction (3 ¼): Disturbance of appetite.
Same period: Dumb water-carrier
Before 4: Possible observation of dogs copulating.
After 4: Anxiety at swallow-tail butterfly.]

An Infantile Neurosis
THE STANDARD EDITION OF
THE COMPLETE PSYCHOLOGICAL WORKS
OF SIGMUND FREUD

*  
VOLUME XVII

SIGMUND FREUD

Studienausgabe
BAND VIII
SIGMUND FREUD IN 1916
An Infantile Neurosis

and

Other Works
Die Freud-Studienausgabe erschien ursprünglich (1969–1979) im Rahmen der S. Fischer-Reihe CONDTITO HUMANA
ERGEBNISSE AUS DEN WISSENSCHAFTEN VOM MENSCHEN
(Herausgeber: Thure von Uexküll und Ilse Grubrich-Simitis;
Berater: Johannes Cremerius, Hans J. Eggens, Thomas Luckmann).
Der vorliegende Abdruck übernimmt unverändert den Text der siebten, korrigierten Auflage von Band VIII.

Ungekürzte Ausgabe
Fischer Taschenbuch Verlag
April 1982
Fischer Taschenbuch Verlag GmbH, Frankfurt am Main
Lizenzausgabe mit freundlicher Genehmigung
des S. Fischer Verlages GmbH, Frankfurt am Main
Für sämtliche Freud-Texte:
© S. Fischer Verlag GmbH, Frankfurt am Main, 1969
Für das aus der Standard Edition of the Complete Psychological Works of
Sigmund Freud entnommene Material:
© The Institute of Psycho-Analysis, London, und Angela Richards, Eynsham, 1969
Für zusätzliches editorisches Material:
© Angela Richards, Eynsham, 1969
Alle Rechte, auch die des Abdrucks im Auszug
und der photomechanischen Wiedergabe, vorbehalten.
Umschlaggestaltung: Mendell & Oberer
Satz: Buchdruckerei Eugen Göbel, Tübingen
Druck und Bindung: Clausen & Bosse, Leck
Printed in Germany
1980–ISBN 3-596-27308-0
CONTENTS

VOLUME SEVENTEEN

FROM THE HISTORY OF AN INFANTILE NEUROSIS (1918[1914])

Editor's Note ........................................ page 3
I Introductory Remarks ................................ 7
II General Survey of the Patient's Environment and of the History of the Case .......... 13
III The Seduction and its Immediate Consequences ...... 19
IV The Dream and the Primal Scene .................. 29
V A Few Discussions .................................. 48
VI The Obsessional Neurosis .......................... 61
VII Anal Erotism and the Castration Complex .......... 72
VIII Material Fresh from the Primal Period—Solution .... 89
IX Recapitations and Problems ........................ 104
APPENDIX: List of Freud's Longer Case Histories .......... 123

INHALT

AUS DER GESCHICHTE EINER INFANTILEN NEUROSE
[*DER WOLFSMANN*] (1918 [1914]) ..................... 125

Editorische Vorbemerkung .............................. 127
I. Vorbemerkungen .................................. 129
II. Übersicht des Milieus und der Krankengeschichte .... 134
III. Die Verführung und ihre nächsten Folgen .......... 139
IV. Der Traum und die Urszene ........................ 149
V. Einige Diskussionen ................................ 166
VI. Die Zwangsneurose ................................ 178
VII. Analerotik und Kastrationskomplex ............. 188
VIII. Nachträge aus der Urzeit – Lösung .............. 203
IX. Zusammenfassungen und Probleme ................ 216
FROM THE HISTORY OF AN INFANTILE NEUROSIS (1918 [1914])

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose (»Der Wolfsmann«) (1918 [1914])
EDITOR'S NOTE

AUS DER GESCHICHTE EINER INFANTILEN NEUROSE

(a) GERMAN EDITIONS:
1918 S.K.S.N., 4, 578-717.
1922 S.K.S.N., 5, 1-140.
1924 G.S., 8, 439-567.
1931 Neurosenlehre und Technik, 37-171.
1947 G.W., 12, 29-157.

(b) ENGLISH TRANSLATION:
'From the History of an Infantile Neurosis'
1925 C.P., 3, 473-605. (Tr. A. and J. Strachey.)

A few changes were introduced into the 1924 German edition, mainly in the matter of dates; and a long footnote was added at the end. The present translation is a revision of the one published in 1925.

This is the most elaborate and no doubt the most important of all Freud's case histories. It was in February, 1910, that the wealthy young Russian who is its subject came to Freud for analysis. His first course of treatment, which is the one reported on in this paper, lasted from then until July, 1914, when Freud regarded the case as completed. He began writing the case history in October of the same year and finished it in early November. He held back its publication, however, for four years. No changes of moment, he tells us (p. 7n), were made in its final form, but two long passages were inserted. The later history of the case, after the conclusion of the first course of treatment, was described by Freud in the footnote which he added in the 1924 edition at the end of the paper (pp. 121-2).

These dates are derived from Ernest Jones (1955, 312), based upon Freud's correspondence. In the footnote below, p. 7, he speaks of the winter of 1914-15.

EDITORISCHE VORBEMERKUNG

Deutsche Ausgaben:
1918 S.K.S.N., Bd. 4, 578-717.
1922 S.K.S.N., Bd. 5, 1-140.
1924 G.S., Bd. 8, 439-567.
1931 Neurosenlehre und Technik, 37-171.
1947 G.W., Bd. 12, 29-157.

In der Ausgabe des Jahres 1924 sind von Freud nur wenige, hauptsächlich Daten betreffende Änderungen vorgenommen worden; am Schluß wurde eine längere Fußnote hinzugefügt.

EDITOR'S NOTE

Some still later information will also be found there, derived partly from material published subsequently by Freud himself and partly from data that have come to light since his death.

Freud made a number of references to the case of the 'Wolf Man' in works published both before and after the case history itself, and these may be worth enumerating. The first public evidence of Freud's interest in the case was a paragraph appearing over his signature in the early autumn of 1912 (Zbl. Psychoanal., 2, 680), and evidently stimulated by the wolf dream which is the central feature of the case history. It came out under the rubric 'Offener Sprechsaal' ('Open Forum') and ran as follows:

'I should be glad if those of my colleagues who are practising analysts would collect and analyse carefully any of their patients' dreams whose interpretation justifies the conclusion that the dreamers had been witnesses of sexual intercourse in their early years. A hint is no doubt enough to make it obvious that such dreams are in more than one respect of quite special value. Only those dreams can, of course, be regarded as evidential which themselves occurred in childhood and were remembered from that period. Freud.'

A further paragraph on the subject appeared early in 1913 (Int. Z. Psychoanal., 1, 79):

'Children's Dreams with a Special Significance

'In the Open Forum of the Zbl. Psychoanal., 2, 680, I requested my colleagues to publish any dreams occurring in childhood 'whose interpretation justifies the conclusion that the dreamers had been witnesses of sexual intercourse in their early years'. I have now to thank Frau Dr. Mira Gincburg (of Breitenau-Schaffhausen) for a first contribution which seems to fulfil the conditions laid down. I prefer to postpone a critical consideration of this dream until more comparative material has been collected.

Freud.'

This note was followed by Dr. Gincburg's account of the dream in question. A similar dream was reported by Hitzchmann later in the same year (Int. Z. Psychoanal., 1, 476), but there were no further communications on the subject by Freud. During the same summer, however, he published his paper on 'The Occurrence in Dreams of Material from Fairy [...]

In seiner Arbeit 'Märchen-
The metapsychological paper on 'Repression' (1915d), which was published before the present work though written after in Psycho-Analytic Treatment' (1914a), describing another Tales' (1913d), which actually reported the wolf-dream and it, contains a paragraph referring to the patient's wolf phobia. Many years after the publication of the case history Freud returned to the case in the course of a discussion of children's animal phobias in Inhibitions, Symptoms and Anxiety (1926d). In Chapters IV and VII of that work the present patient's wolf phobia is compared with the horse phobia analysed in the case of 'Little Hans' (1909b). Finally, in one of his very last papers, 'Analysis Terminable and Interminable' (1937c), Freud made some critical comments on the technical innovation of setting a time-limit to the treatment, which he introduced in this case and describes on p. 11.

The primary significance of the case history in Freud's eyes at the time of its publication was clearly the support it provided for his criticisms of Adler and more especially of Jung. Here was conclusive evidence to refute any denial of infantile sexuality. But much else of high value emerged from the treatment, though some of it had already been given to the world during the four years' interval between the composition of the case history and its publication. There was, for instance, the relation between 'primal scenes' and 'primal phantasies', which led directly to the obscure problem of the possibility that the mental content of primal phantasies could be inherited. This was examined in Lecture XXIII of the Introductory Lectures (1916–17) but was further elaborated here in the additional passages on pp. 57 ff. and 95 ff. Again, the remarkable material in Section VII, dealing with the patient's anal erotism, was used by Freud in his paper 'On Transformations of Instinct' (1917c), p. 125 below.

Even more important was the light thrown by the present analysis on the earlier, oral, organization of the libido, which is discussed at some length on pp. 106–7 below. Freud's first published reference to this organization was in a paragraph added in 1915 to the third edition of his Three Essays (1905d), Standard
EDITOR'S NOTE

Ed., 7, 198. The preface to this third edition bears the date 'October 1914'—the precise month during which he was writing his paper on the 'Wolf Man'. It seems likely that the 'cannibalistic' material revealed in this analysis played an important part in preparing the way for some of the most momentous of the theories with which Freud was occupied at this period: the interconnections between incorporation, identification, the formation of an ego-ideal, the sense of guilt and pathological states of depression. Some of these theories had already been expressed in the last essay of Totem and Taboo (written in the middle of 1913) and his paper on narcissism (finished early in 1914). Others were to appear in his 'Mourning and Melancholia'. This last was not published until 1917. But it was given its final shape at the beginning of May, 1915; and many of the views contained in it had been stated before the Vienna Psycho-Analytical Society on December 30, 1914, only a few weeks after the composition of this case history (Jones, 1955, 367).

Perhaps the chief clinical finding was the evidence revealed of the determining part played in the patient's neurosis by his primary feminine impulses. The very marked degree of his bisexuality was only a confirmation of views which had long been held by Freud and which dated back to the time of his friendship with Fliess. But in his subsequent writings Freud laid greater stress than before on the fact of the universal occurrence of bisexuality and on the existence of an 'inverted' or 'negative' Oedipus complex. This thesis was given its clearest expression in the passage on the 'complete' Oedipus complex in Chapter III of The Ego and the Id (1923 b). On the other hand, a tempting theoretical inference to the effect that motives related to bisexuality are the invariable determinants of repression is strongly resisted (p. 110 ff.)—a point to which Freud returned at greater length soon afterwards in 'A Child is Being Beaten' (1919 c), p. 200 ff. below.

Finally, it is perhaps legitimate to draw attention to the extraordinary literary skill with which Freud has handled the case. He was faced with the pioneer's task of giving a scientific account of psychological events of undreamt-of novelty and complexity. The outcome is a work which not only avoids the dangers of confusion and obscurity but from first to last holds the reader's fascinated attention.
FROM THE HISTORY
OF AN INFANTILE NEUROSES

I
INTRODUCTORY REMARKS

The case upon which I propose to report in the following pages (once again only in a fragmentary manner) is characterized by a number of peculiarities which require to be emphasized before I proceed to a description of the facts themselves. It is concerned with a young man whose health had broken down in his eighteenth year after a gonorrhoea infection, and who was entirely incapacitated and completely dependent upon other people when he began his psycho-analytic treatment several years later. He had lived an approximately normal life during the ten years of his boyhood that preceded the date of his illness, and got through his studies at his secondary school under the impression of the twisted re-interpretations which C. G. Jung and Alfred Adler were endeavouring to give to the findings of psycho-analysis. This paper is therefore connected with my essay 'On the History of the Psycho-Analytic Movement' which was published in the Jahrbuch der Psychoanalyse in 1914. It supplements the polemic contained in that essay, which is in its essence of a personal character, by an objective estimation of the analytic material. It was originally intended for the next volume of the Jahrbuch, the appearance of which was, however, postponed indefinitely owing to the obstacles raised by the first Great War. I therefore decided to add it to the present collection of paper, [S.K.S.N., 4] which was being issued by a new publisher [Heller, in place of Deuticke]. Meanwhile I had been obliged to deal in my Introductory Lectures on Psycho-Analysis (which I delivered in 1916 and 1917) with many points which should have been raised for the first time in this paper. No alterations of any importance have been made in the text of the first draft; additions are indicated by means of square brackets. [There are only two such additional passages, occurring on pp. 57 and 95. Elsewhere in this paper, as in the rest of the Standard Edition, square brackets indicate additions by the Editor. The words 'twisted re-interpretations' in this footnote stand for the German 'Umdeutungen'. The English version was suggested by the author.]

Aus der Geschichte
einer infantilen Neurose

I
VORBEMERKUNGEN

Der Krankheitsfall, über welchen ich hier – wiedergedruckt nur in fragmen-
tarischer Weise – berichten werde 1, ist durch eine Anzahl von Eigentüm-
lichkeiten ausgezeichnet, welche zu ihrer Hervorhebung vor der Dar-
stellung auffordern. Er betrifft einen jungen Mann, welcher in seinem
achtzehnten Jahr nach einer gonorrhoeischen Infektion als krank zusam-
menbrach und gänzlich abhängig und existenzunfähig war, als er meh-
rere Jahre später in psychoanalytische Behandlung trat. Das Jahrzehnt
seiner Jugend vor dem Zeitpunkt der Erkrankung hatte er in annähernd
normaler Weise durchlebt und seine Mittelschulstudien ohne viel Stö-

änderungen von irgendwelchem Belang erfahren; Zusätze sind durch eckige Klammern kenntlich gemacht. [Es sind nur zwei solcher Zusätze vorhanden, nämlich auf S. 174 ff. und 208 ff. Im übrigen sind in dieser vorliegenden Arbeit wie auch sonst in der Studien-
ausgabe sämtliche Herausgeber-Hinweise durch eckige Klammern kenntlich gemacht.]

2 [In den vor 1924 erschienenen Ausgaben hieß es 'achten'.]
without much trouble. But his earlier years were dominated by a severe neurotic disturbance, which began immediately before his fourth birthday as an anxiety-hysthria (in the shape of an animal phobia), then changed into an obsessional neurosis with a religious content, and lasted with its offshoots as far as into his tenth year.

Only this infantile neurosis will be the subject of my communication. In spite of the patient's direct request, I have abstained from writing a complete history of his illness, of his treatment, and of his recovery, because I recognized that such a task was technically impracticable and socially impermissible. This at the same time removes the possibility of demonstrating the connection between his illness in childhood and his later and permanent one. As regards the latter I can only say that on account of it the patient spent a long time in German sanatoria, and was at that period classified in the most authoritative quarters as a case of 'manic-depressive insanity'. This diagnosis was certainly applicable to the patient's father, whose life, with its wealth of activity and interests, was disturbed by repeated attacks of severe depression. But in the son I was never able, during an observation which lasted several years, to detect any changes of mood which were disproportionate to the manifest psychological situation either in their intensity or in the circumstances of their appearance. I have formed the opinion that this case, like many others which followed on an obsessional neurosis which has come to a conclusion was certainly applicable to the patient's father, whose illness, with its wealth of activity and interests, was disturbed by repeated attacks of severe depression. But in the son I was never able, during an observation which lasted several years, to detect any changes of mood which were disproportionate to the manifest psychological situation either in their intensity or in the circumstances of their appearance. I have formed the opinion that this case, like many others which followed on an obsessional neurosis which has come to an end spontaneously, but has left a defect behind it after recovery.

My description will therefore deal with an infantile neurosis which was analysed not while it actually existed, but only fifteen years after its termination. This state of things has its advantages as well as its disadvantages in comparison with the alternative. An analysis which is conducted upon a neurotic child itself must, as a matter of course, appear to be more trustworthy, but it cannot be very rich in material; too many

Meine Beschreibung wird also von einer infantilen Neurose handeln, die nicht während ihres Bestandes, sondern erst fünfzehn Jahre nach ihrem Ablauf analysiert worden ist. Diese Situation hat ihre Vorzüge ebenso wohl wie ihre Nachteile im Vergleich mit der anderen. Die Analyse, die man am neurotischen Kind selbst vollzieht, wird von vornherein vertrauenswürdiger erscheinen, aber sie kann nicht sehr inhaltsreich
words and thoughts have to be lent to the child, and even so the deepest strata may turn out to be impenetrable to consciousness. An analysis of a childhood disorder through the medium of recollection in an intellectually mature adult is free from these limitations; but it necessitates our taking into account the distortion and refurbishing to which a person's own past is subjected when it is looked back upon from a later period. The first alternative perhaps gives the more convincing results; the second is by far the more instructive.

In any case it may be maintained that analysis of children's neuroses can claim to possess a specially high theoretical interest. They afford us, roughly speaking, as much help towards a proper understanding of the neuroses of adults as do children's dreams in respect to the dreams of adults. Not, indeed, that they are more perspicuous or poorer in elements; in fact, the difficulty of feeling one's way into the mental life of a child makes them set the physician a particularly difficult task. But nevertheless, so many of the later deposits are wanting in them that the essence of the neurosis springs to the eyes with unmistakable distinctness. In the present phase of the battle which is raging round psycho-analysis the resistance to its findings has, as we know, taken on a new form. People were content formerly to dispute the reality of the facts which are asserted by analysis; and for this purpose the best technique seemed to be to avoid examining them. That procedure appears to be slowly exhausting itself; and people are now adopting another plan—of recognizing the facts, but of eliminating, by means of twisted interpretations, the consequences that follow from them, so that the critics can still ward off the objectionable novelties as efficiently as ever. The study of children's neuroses exposes the complete inadequacy of these shallow or high-handed attempts at re-interpretation. It shows the predominant part that is played in the formation of neuroses by those libidinal motive forces which are so eagerly disavowed, and reveals the absence of any aspirations towards remote cultural aims, of which the child still knows nothing, and which cannot therefore be of any significance for him.

Another characteristic which makes the present analysis

1 [The evidential value of child-analysis had been discussed by Freud in the case history of 'Little Hans' (1909b), Standard Ed., 10, 6 and 101 ff.]

Vorbemerkungen

sein; man muß dem Kind zuviel Worte und Gedanken leihen und wird vielleicht doch die tiefsten Schichten undurchdringlich für das Bewusstsein finden. Die Analyse der Kindheitserkrankung durch das Medium der Erinnerung beim Erwachsenen und geistig Gereiften ist von diesen Einschränkungen frei; aber man wird die Verzerrung und Zurichtung in Rechnung bringen, welcher die eigene Vergangenheit beim Rückblick aus späterer Zeit unterworfen ist. Der erste Fall gibt vielleicht die überzeugenderen Resultate, der zweite ist der bei weitem lehrreichere.

Auf alle Fälle darf man aber behaupten, daß Analysen von kindlichen Neurosen ein besonders hohes theoretisches Interesse beanspruchen können. Sie leisten für das richtige Verständnis der Neurosen Erwachsener ungefähr soviel wie die Kinderträume für die Träume der Erwachsenen. Nicht etwa, daß sie leichter zu durchschauen oder ärmer an Elementen wären; die Schwierigkeit der Einfühlung ins kindliche Seelenleben macht sie sogar zu einem besonders harten Stück Arbeit für den Arzt. Aber es sind doch in ihnen so viele der späteren Auflagerungen weggefallen, daß das Wesenliche der Neurose unverkennbar hervortritt. Der Widerstand gegen die Ergebnisse der Psychoanalyse hat bekanntlich in der gegenwärtigen Phase des Kampfes um die Psychoanalyse eine neue Form angenommen. Man begnügte sich früher damit, den von der Analyse behaupteten Tatsachen die Wirklichkeit zu bestreiten, wozu eine Vermeidung der Nachprüfung die beste Technik schien. Dies Verfahren scheint sich nun langsam zu erschöpfen; man schlägt jetzt den anderen Weg ein, die Tatsachen anzuerkennen, aber die Folgerungen, die sich aus ihnen ergeben, durch Umdeutungen zu beseitigen, so daß man sich der anstößigen Neuheiten doch wieder erwehrt hat. Das Studium der kindlichen Neurosen erweist die volle Unzulänglichkeit dieser seichten oder gewalt­samen Umdeutungsversuche. Es zeigt den überragenden Anteile der sogen verleugneten libidinösen Triebkräfte an der Gestaltung der Neurose auf und läßt die Abwesenheit fernliegender kultureller Zielsbindingen erkennen, von denen das Kind noch nichts weiß, und die ihm darum nichts bedeuten können.

Ein anderer Zug, welcher die hier mitzuteilende Analyse der Aufmerk-

8 [Der Wert der Kinderanalyse als Beweismittel ist von Freud in der Krankengeschichte des 'kleinen Hanss', S. 13 f. und 87 ff. des vorliegenden Bandes, erörtert worden.]

130
noteworthy is connected with the severity of the illness and the duration of the treatment. Analyses which lead to a favourable conclusion in a short time are of value in ministering to the therapeutist’s self-esteem and substantiate the medical importance of psycho-analysis; but they remain for the most part insignificant as regards the advancement of scientific knowledge. Nothing new is learnt from them. In fact they only succeed so quickly because everything that was necessary for their accomplishment was already known. Something new can only be gained from analyses that present special difficulties, and to the overcoming of these a great deal of time has to be devoted. Only in such cases do we succeed in descending into the deepest and most primitive strata of mental development and in gaining from there solutions for the problems of the later formations. And we feel afterwards that, strictly speaking, only an analysis which has penetrated so far deserves the name. Naturally a single case does not give us all the information that we should feel afterwards that, strictly speaking, only an analysis which has penetrated so far deserves the name. Naturally a single case does not give us all the information that we should have. Or, to put it more correctly, it might teach us everything, if we were only in a position to make everything out, and if we were not compelled by the inexperience of our own perception to content ourselves with a little.

As regards these fertile difficulties the case I am about to discuss left nothing to be desired. The first years of the treatment produced scarcely any change. Owing to a fortunate concatenation, all the external circumstances nevertheless combined to make it possible to proceed with the therapeutic experiment. I can easily believe that in less favourable circumstances the treatment would have been given up after a short time. Of the physician’s point of view I can only declare that in a case of this kind he must behave as ‘timelessly’ as the unconscious itself, if he wishes to learn anything or to achieve anything. And in the end he will succeed in doing so, if he has the strength to renounce any short-sighted therapeutic ambition. It is not to be expected that the amount of patience, adaptability, insight, and confidence demanded of the patient and his relatives will be forthcoming in many other cases. But the analyst has a right to feel that the results which he has attained from such lengthy work in one case will help substantially to reduce the length of the treatment in a subsequent case of equal severity, and that by submitting on a single occasion

1 [See ‘The Unconscious’ (1915e), Part V.]

An infantile neurosis is connected with the severity of the illness and the duration of the treatment. Analyses which lead to a favourable conclusion in a short time are of value in ministering to the therapeutist’s self-esteem and substantiate the medical importance of psycho-analysis; but they remain for the most part insignificant as regards the advancement of scientific knowledge. Nothing new is learnt from them. In fact they only succeed so quickly because everything that was necessary for their accomplishment was already known. Something new can only be gained from analyses that present special difficulties, and to the overcoming of these a great deal of time has to be devoted. Only in such cases do we succeed in descending into the deepest and most primitive strata of mental development and in gaining from there solutions for the problems of the later formations. And we feel afterwards that, strictly speaking, only an analysis which has penetrated so far deserves the name. Naturally a single case does not give us all the information that we should feel afterwards that, strictly speaking, only an analysis which has penetrated so far deserves the name. Naturally a single case does not give us all the information that we should have. Or, to put it more correctly, it might teach us everything, if we were only in a position to make everything out, and if we were not compelled by the inexperience of our own perception to content ourselves with a little.

As regards these fertile difficulties the case I am about to discuss left nothing to be desired. The first years of the treatment produced scarcely any change. Owing to a fortunate concatenation, all the external circumstances nevertheless combined to make it possible to proceed with the therapeutic experiment. I can easily believe that in less favourable circumstances the treatment would have been given up after a short time. Of the physician’s point of view I can only declare that in a case of this kind he must behave as ‘timelessly’ as the unconscious itself, if he wishes to learn anything or to achieve anything. And in the end he will succeed in doing so, if he has the strength to renounce any short-sighted therapeutic ambition. It is not to be expected that the amount of patience, adaptability, insight, and confidence demanded of the patient and his relatives will be forthcoming in many other cases. But the analyst has a right to feel that the results which he has attained from such lengthy work in one case will help substantially to reduce the length of the treatment in a subsequent case of equal severity, and that by submitting on a single occasion

1 [See ‘The Unconscious’ (1915e), Part V.]

An infantile neurosis is connected with the severity of the illness and the duration of the treatment. Analyses which lead to a favourable conclusion in a short time are of value in ministering to the therapeutist’s self-esteem and substantiate the medical importance of psycho-analysis; but they remain for the most part insignificant as regards the advancement of scientific knowledge. Nothing new is learnt from them. In fact they only succeed so quickly because everything that was necessary for their accomplishment was already known. Something new can only be gained from analyses that present special difficulties, and to the overcoming of these a great deal of time has to be devoted. Only in such cases do we succeed in descending into the deepest and most primitive strata of mental development and in gaining from there solutions for the problems of the later formations. And we feel afterwards that, strictly speaking, only an analysis which has penetrated so far deserves the name. Naturally a single case does not give us all the information that we should feel afterwards that, strictly speaking, only an analysis which has penetrated so far deserves the name. Naturally a single case does not give us all the information that we should have. Or, to put it more correctly, it might teach us everything, if we were only in a position to make everything out, and if we were not compelled by the inexperience of our own perception to content ourselves with a little.

As regards these fertile difficulties the case I am about to discuss left nothing to be desired. The first years of the treatment produced scarcely any change. Owing to a fortunate concatenation, all the external circumstances nevertheless combined to make it possible to proceed with the therapeutic experiment. I can easily believe that in less favourable circumstances the treatment would have been given up after a short time. Of the physician’s point of view I can only declare that in a case of this kind he must behave as ‘timelessly’ as the unconscious itself, if he wishes to learn anything or to achieve anything. And in the end he will succeed in doing so, if he has the strength to renounce any short-sighted therapeutic ambition. It is not to be expected that the amount of patience, adaptability, insight, and confidence demanded of the patient and his relatives will be forthcoming in many other cases. But the analyst has a right to feel that the results which he has attained from such lengthy work in one case will help substantially to reduce the length of the treatment in a subsequent case of equal severity, and that by submitting on a single occasion

1 [See ‘The Unconscious’ (1915e), Part V.]

An infantile neurosis is connected with the severity of the illness and the duration of the treatment. Analyses which lead to a favourable conclusion in a short time are of value in ministering to the therapeutist’s self-esteem and substantiate the medical importance of psycho-analysis; but they remain for the most part insignificant as regards the advancement of scientific knowledge. Nothing new is learnt from them. In fact they only succeed so quickly because everything that was necessary for their accomplishment was already known. Something new can only be gained from analyses that present special difficulties, and to the overcoming of these a great deal of time has to be devoted. Only in such cases do we succeed in descending into the deepest and most primitive strata of mental development and in gaining from there solutions for the problems of the later formations. And we feel afterwards that, strictly speaking, only an analysis which has penetrated so far deserves the name. Naturally a single case does not give us all the information that we should feel afterwards that, strictly speaking, only an analysis which has penetrated so far deserves the name. Naturally a single case does not give us all the information that we should have. Or, to put it more correctly, it might teach us everything, if we were only in a position to make everything out, and if we were not compelled by the inexperience of our own perception to content ourselves with a little.

As regards these fertile difficulties the case I am about to discuss left nothing to be desired. The first years of the treatment produced scarcely any change. Owing to a fortunate concatenation, all the external circumstances nevertheless combined to make it possible to proceed with the therapeutic experiment. I can easily believe that in less favourable circumstances the treatment would have been given up after a short time. Of the physician’s point of view I can only declare that in a case of this kind he must behave as ‘timelessly’ as the unconscious itself, if he wishes to learn anything or to achieve anything. And in the end he will succeed in doing so, if he has the strength to renounce any short-sighted therapeutic ambition. It is not to be expected that the amount of patience, adaptability, insight, and confidence demanded of the patient and his relatives will be forthcoming in many other cases. But the analyst has a right to feel that the results which he has attained from such lengthy work in one case will help substantially to reduce the length of the treatment in a subsequent case of equal severity, and that by submitting on a single occasion

1 [See ‘The Unconscious’ (1915e), Part V.]

An infantile neurosis is connected with the severity of the illness and the duration of the treatmen
to the timelessness of the unconscious he will be brought nearer
to vanquishing it in the end.\footnote{1}

The patient with whom I am here concerned remained for
a long time unassailably entrenched behind an attitude of
obliging apathy. He listened, understood, and remained un-
approachable. His unimpeachable intelligence was, as it were,
cut off from the instinctual forces which governed his behaviour
in the few relations of life that remained to him. It required a
long education to induce him to take an independent share in
the work; and when as a result of this exertion he began for
the first time to feel relief, he immediately gave up working
outweighed this shrinking, and then played off this one factor
against the other. I determined—but not until trustworthy
signs had led me to judge that the right moment had
come— that the treatment must be brought to an end at a particular
fixed date, no matter how far it had advanced. I was resolved
to keep to the date; and eventually the patient came to see that
I was in earnest. Under the inexorable pressure of this fixed
limit his resistance and his fixation to the illness gave way, and
now in a disproportionately short time the analysis produced
all the material which made it possible to clear up his inhibitions
and remove his symptoms. All the information, too, which
enabled me to understand his infantile neurosis is derived from
this last period of the work, during which resistance temporarily
disappeared and the patient gave an impression of lucidity
which is usually attainable only in hypnosis.\footnote{2}

Thus the course of this treatment illustrates a maxim whose
truth has long been appreciated in the technique of analysis.
The length of the road over which an analysis must travel with the
patient, and the quantity of material which must be

\footnote{1}{The question of the length of analyses was discussed by Freud in
"Analysis Terminable and Interminable" (1937c).}

\footnote{2}{The effects of setting a time-limit to an analysis were considered
by Freud in reference to this particular case in Section I of the paper quoted
in the last footnote (1937 c).}
mastered on the way, are of no importance in comparison with the resistance which is met with in the course of the work, and are only of importance at all in so far as they are necessarily proportional to the resistance. The situation is the same as when to-day an enemy army needs weeks and months to make its way across a stretch of country which in times of peace was traversed by an express train in a few hours and which only a short time before had been passed over by the defending army in a few days.

A third peculiarity of the analysis which is to be described in these pages has only increased my difficulty in deciding to make a report upon it. On the whole its results have coincided in the most satisfactory manner with our previous knowledge, or have been easily embodied into it. Many details, however, seemed to me myself to be so extraordinary and incredible that I felt some hesitation in asking other people to believe them. I requested the patient to make the strictest criticism of his recollections, but he found nothing improbable in his statements and adhered closely to them. Readers may at all events rest assured that I myself am only reporting what I came upon as an independent experience, uninfluenced by my expectation. So that there was nothing left for me but to remember the wise saying that there are more things in heaven and earth than are dreamed of in our philosophy. Anyone who could succeed in eliminating his pre-existing convictions even more thoroughly could no doubt discover even more such things.¹

¹ [The rather complicated chronology of the case will become clearer if reference is made to the footnote on p. 121 below.]
II

GENERAL SURVEY OF THE PATIENT'S ENVIRONMENT AND OF THE HISTORY OF THE CASE

I am unable to give either a purely historical or a purely thematic account of my patient's story; I can write a history neither of the treatment nor of the illness, but I shall find myself obliged to combine the two methods of presentation. It is well known that no means has been found of in any way introducing into the reproduction of an analysis the sense of conviction which results from the analysis itself. Exhaustive verbatim reports of the proceedings during the hours of analysis would certainly be of no help at all; and in any case the technique of the treatment makes it impossible to draw them up. So analyses such as this are not published in order to produce conviction in the minds of those whose attitude has hitherto been recusant and sceptical. The intention is only to bring forward some new facts for investigators who have already been convinced by their own clinical experiences.

I shall begin, then, by giving a picture of the child's world, and by telling as much of the story of his childhood as could be learnt without any exertion; it was not, indeed, for several years that the story became any less incomplete and obscure.

His parents had been married young, and were still leading a happy married life, upon which their ill-health was soon to throw the first shadows. His mother began to suffer from abdominal disorders, and his father from his first attacks of depression, which led to his absence from home. Naturally the patient only came to understand his father's illness very much later on, but he was aware of his mother's weak health even in his early childhood. As a consequence of it she had relatively little to do with the children. One day, certainly before his fourth year, while his mother was seeing off the doctor to the station and he himself was walking beside her, holding her hand,

[1 See p. 76n. In the editions before 1924 this read 'perhaps in his sixth year'.]
he overheard her lamenting her condition. Her words made a deep impression upon him, and later on he applied them to himself [cf. p. 77]. He was not the only child; he had a sister, about two years his elder, lively, gifted, and precociously naughty, who was to play an important part in his life.

As far back as he could remember he was looked after by a nurse, an uneducated old woman of peasant birth, with an untiring affection for him. He served her as a substitute for a son of her own who had died young. The family lived on a country estate, from which they used to move to another for the summer. The two estates were not far from a large town. There was a break in his childhood when his parents sold the estates and moved into the town. Near relatives used often to pay them long visits and pay much attention on his mother and their children, and his grandparents on his mother's side. During the summer his parents used to be away for a few weeks. In a screen memory he saw himself with his nurse looking after the carriage which was driving off with his father, mother and sister, and then going peaceably back into the house. He must have been very small at that time.1 Next summer his sister was left at home, and an English governess was engaged, who became responsible for the supervision of the children.

In his later years he was told many stories about his childhood. He knew a great deal himself, but it was naturally difficult for him to fill up the gaps left by his parents. Stories that may be told by relatives in an inexact, unauthentic manner, will under no circumstances be taken as absolutely infallible information; at the same time confidence in authentic material can come into play. One invariably regrets having made oneself dependent upon such information; at the same time confidence in the analysis is shaken and a court of appeal is set up over it. Whatever can be remembered at all will anyhow come to light in the further course of analysis. 1

1 Two and a half years old. It was possible later on to determine almost all the dates with certainty.

Information of this kind may, as a rule, be employed as absolutely authentic material. So it may seem tempting to take the easy course of filling up the gaps in a patient's memory by making enquiries from the older members of his family; but I cannot advise too strongly against such a technique. Any stories that may be told by relatives in reply to enquiries and requests are at the mercy of every critical misgiving that can come into play. One invariably regrets having made oneself dependent upon such information; at the same time confidence in the analysis is shaken and a court of appeal is set up over it. Whatever can be remembered at all will anyhow come to light in the further course of analysis.
even quiet child, so that they used to say of him that he ought to have been the girl and his elder sister the boy. But once, when his parents came back from their summer holiday, they found him transformed. He had become discontented, irritable and violent, took offence on every possible occasion, and then flew into a rage and screamed like a savage; so that, when this state of things continued, his parents expressed their misgivings as to whether it would be possible to send him to school later on. This happened during the summer while the English governess was with them. She turned out to be an eccentric and quarrelsome person, and, moreover, to be addicted to drink. The boy's mother was therefore inclined to ascribe the alteration in his character to the influence of this Englishwoman, and assumed that she had irritated him by her treatment. His sharp-sighted grandmother, who had spent the summer with the children, was of opinion that the boy's irritability had been provoked by the dissensions between the Englishwoman and the nurse. The Englishwoman had repeatedly called the nurse a witch, and had obliged her to leave the room; the little boy had openly taken the side of his beloved 'Nanya' and let the governess see his hatred. However it may have been, the Englishwoman was sent away soon after the parents' return, without there being any consequent change in the child's unbearable behaviour.

The patient had preserved his memory of this naughty period. According to his belief he made the first of his scenes one Christmas, when he was not given a double quantity of presents—which were his due, because Christmas Day was at the same time his birthday. He did not spare even his beloved Nanya with his importunity and touchiness, and even tormented her more remorselessly perhaps than any one. But the phase which brought with it his change in character was inextricably connected in his memory with many other strange and pathological phenomena which he was unable to arrange in chronological sequence. He threw all the incidents that I am now about to relate (which cannot possibly have been contemporaneous, and which are full of internal contradictions) into one and the same period of time, to which he gave the name 'still on the first estate'. He thought they must have left that estate by the time he was five years old. Thus he could recollect how he had suffered

1 [The patient probably had in mind the estate on which the family lived for most of the year (cf. p. 14). Some time after the two original

...
from a fear, which his sister exploited for the purpose of tormenting him. There was a particular picture-book, in which a wolf was represented, standing upright and striding along. Whenever he caught sight of this picture he began to scream like a lunatic that he was afraid of the wolf coming and eating him up. His sister, however, always succeeded in arranging so that he was obliged to see this picture, and was delighted at his terror. Meanwhile he was also frightened at other animals as well, big and little. Once he was running after a beautiful big butterfly, with striped yellow wings which ended in points, in the hope of catching it. (It was no doubt a ‘swallow-tail’.) He was suddenly seized with a terrible fear of the creature, and, screaming, gave up the chase. He also felt fear and loathing of a wolf was represented, standing upright and striding along. Like a lunatic that he was afraid of the wolf coming and eating him, he gave up the chase. He also felt fear and loathing of this picture, in which a wolf was represented, standing upright and striding along. (It was no doubt a ‘swallow-tail’.) He was suddenly seized with a terrible fear of the creature, and, screaming, gave up the chase. He also felt fear and loathing of this picture, in which a wolf was represented, standing upright and striding along. (It was no doubt a ‘swallow-tail’.) He was suddenly seized with a terrible fear of the creature, and, screaming, gave up the chase.

Horses, too, gave him an uncanny feeling. If a horse was beaten he began to scream, and he was once obliged to leave a circus on that account. On other occasions he himself enjoyed beating horses. Whether these contradictory sorts of attitudes towards animals were really in operation simultaneously, or whether they did not more probably replace one another, but if so in what order and when—to all these questions his memory could offer no decisive reply. He was also unable to say whether his naughty period was replaced by a phase of illness or whether it persisted right through the latter. But, in any case, the statements of his that follow justified the assumption that during these years of his childhood he went through an easily recognizable attack of obsessional neurosis. He related how during a long period he was very pious. Before he went to sleep he was obliged to pray for a long time and to make an endless series of signs of the cross. In the evening, too, he used to make the round of all the holy pictures that hung in the room, taking a chair with him, upon which he climbed, and used to kiss each one of them devoutly. It was utterly inconsistent with this pious ceremonial—or, on the other hand, perhaps it was quite consistent with it—that he should recollect some blasphemous thoughts which used to come into his head like an inspiration.

Estates were sold, the family, as Freud informed the translators, bought a new one (cf. p. 93).]

['Schwalbenschwanz' Here, and at the beginning of Section VIII below, the editions before 1924 read 'Admiral'.]

__Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose__


8 [Hier und zu Beginn von Abschnitt VIII, unten, hieß es in den Ausgaben vor 1924 «Admiral».]
from the devil. He was obliged to think ‘God—swine’ or ‘God—shit’. Once while he was on a journey to a health-resort in Germany he was tormented by the obsession of having to think of the Holy Trinity whenever he saw three heaps of horse-dung or other excrement lying in the road. At that time he used to carry out another peculiar ceremonial when he saw people that he felt sorry for, such as beggars, cripples, or very old men. He had to breathe out noisily, so as not to become like them; and under certain conditions he had to draw in his breath vigorously. I naturally assumed that these obvious symptoms of an obsessional neurosis belonged to a somewhat later time and stage of development than the signs of anxiety and the cruel treatment of animals.

The patient’s maturer years were marked by a very unsatisfactory relation to his father, who, after repeated attacks of depression, was no longer able to conceal the pathological features of his character. In the earliest years of the patient’s childhood this relation had been a very affectionate one, and the recollection of it had remained in his memory. His father was very fond of him, and liked playing with him. From an early age he was proud of his father, and was always declaring that he would like to be a gentleman like him. His Nanya told him that his sister was his mother’s child, but that he was his father’s—which had very much pleased him. Towards the end of his childhood there was an estrangement between him and his father. His father had an unmistakable affection for his sister, and he felt very much slighted by this. Later on fear of his father became the dominating factor.

All of the phenomena which the patient associated with the phase of his life that began with his naughtiness disappeared in about his eighth year. They did not disappear at a single blow, and made occasional reappearances, but finally gave way, in the patient’s opinion, before the influence of the masters and tutors, who then took the place of the women who had hitherto looked after him. Here, then, in the briefest outline, are the riddles for which the analysis had to find a solution. What was the origin of the sudden change in the boy’s character? What was the significance of his phobia and of his perversities? How did he arrive at his obsessive piety? And how are all these phenomena interrelated? I will once more recall the fact that our therapeutic work was concerned with a subsequent and recent...
AN INFANTILE NEUROSIS

neurotic illness, and that light could only be thrown upon these earlier problems when the course of the analysis led away for a time from the present, and forced us to make a détour through the prehistoric period of childhood.

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose

zenten neurotischen Erkrankung galt und daß Aufschlüsse über jene früheren Probleme sich nur ergeben konnten, wenn der Verlauf der Analyse für eine Zeit von der Gegenwart abführte, um uns zu dem Umweg durch die kindliche Urzeit zu nötigen.
THE SEDUCTION AND ITS IMMEDIATE CONSEQUENCES

It is easy to understand that the first suspicion fell upon the English governess, for the change in the boy made its appearance while she was there. Two screen memories had persisted, which were incomprehensible in themselves, and which related to her. On one occasion, as she was walking along in front of them, she said: 'Do look at my little tail!' Another time, when they were on a drive, her hat flew away, to the two children's great satisfaction. This pointed to the castration complex, and might permit of a construction being made to the effect that a threat uttered by her against the boy had been largely responsible for originating his abnormal conduct. There is no danger at all in communicating constructions of this kind to the person under analysis; they never do any damage to the analysis if they are mistaken; but at the same time they are not put forward unless there is some prospect of reaching a nearer approximation to the truth by means of them.

The first effect of this supposition was the appearance of some dreams, which it was not possible to interpret completely, but all of which seemed to centre around the same material. As far as they could be understood, they were concerned with aggressive actions on the boy's part against his sister or against the governess and with energetic reproofs and punishments on account of them. It was as though... after her bath... he had tried... to undress his sister... to tear off her coverings... or veils—and so on. But it was not possible to get at any firm content from the interpretation; and since these dreams gave an impression of always working over the same material in various different ways, the correct reading of these ostensible reminiscences became assured: it could only be a question of phantasies, which the dreamer had made on the subject of his childhood at some time or other, probably at the age of puberty, and which had now come to the surface again in this unrecognizable form.

1 [Freud entered into this at greater length in his paper 'Constructions in Analysis' (1937d), particularly in Section II.]
The explanation came at a single blow, when the patient suddenly called to mind the fact that, when he was still very small, 'on the first estate', his sister had seduced him into sexual practices. First came a recollection that in the lavatory, which the children used frequently to visit together, she had made this proposal: 'Let's show our bottoms', and had proceeded from words to deeds. Subsequently the more essential part of the seduction came to light, with full particulars as to time and place. It was in spring, at a time when his father was away; the children were in one room playing on the floor, while their mother was working in the next. His sister had taken hold of his penis and played with it, at the same time telling him in-comprehensible stories about his Nanya, as though by way of explanation. His Nanya, she said, used to do the same thing with all kinds of people—for instance, with the gardener: she used to stand him on his head, and then take hold of his genitals.

Here, then, was the explanation of the phantasies whose existence we had already divined. They were meant to efface the memory of an event which later on seemed offensive to the patient's masculine self-esteem, and they reached this end by putting an imaginary and desirable converse in the place of the historical truth. According to these phantasies it was not he who had played the passive part towards his sister, but, on the contrary, he had been aggressive, had tried to see his sister undressed, had been rejected and punished, and had for that reason got into the rage which the family tradition talked of so much. It was also appropriate to weave the governess into this imaginative composition, since the chief responsibility for his fits of rage had been ascribed to her by his mother and grandmother. These phantasies, therefore, corresponded exactly to the legends by means of which a nation that has become great has actually had only a very remote share in the seduction and its consequences. The scenes with his sister took place in the early part of the same year in which, at the height of the summer, the Englishwoman arrived to take the place of his absent parents. The boy's hostility to the governess had been rejected and punished, and had for that reason got into the rage which the family tradition talked of so much. It was also appropriate to weave the governess into this imaginative composition, since the chief responsibility for his fits of rage had been ascribed to her by his mother and grandmother. These phantasies, therefore, corresponded exactly to the legends by means of which a nation that has become great and proud tries to conceal the insignificance and failure of its beginnings.¹

¹ [See the longer discussion of this in Freud's study of Leonardo (1910c), near the beginning of Chapter II.]

In Wirklichkeit konnte die Gouvernante an der Verführung und ihren Folgen nur einen sehr entlegenen Anteil haben. Die Szenen mit der Schwester fanden im Frühjahr des nämlichen Jahres statt, in dessen Hochsommermonaten die Englän­derin als Ersatz der abwesenden Eltern eintrat. Die Feindseligkeit des Knaben gegen die Gouvernante kam viel-
(III) THE SEDUCTION

came about, rather, in another way. By abusing the nurse and slandering her as a witch, she was in his eyes following in the footsteps of his sister, who had first told him such monstrous stories about the nurse; and in this way she enabled him to express openly against herself the aversion which, as we shall hear, he had developed against his sister as a result of his seduction.

But his seduction by his sister was certainly not a phantasy. Its credibility was increased by some information which had never been forgotten and which dated from a later part of his life, when he was grown up. A cousin who was more than ten years his elder told him in a conversation about his sister that she had sat on his lap and opened his trousers to take hold of his penis.

I should like at this point to break off the story of my patient’s childhood and say something of this sister, of her development and later fortunes, and of the influence she had on him. She was two years older than he was, and had always remained ahead of him. As a child she was boyish and unmanageable, but she then entered upon a brilliant intellectual development and distinguished herself by her acute and realistic powers of mind; she inclined in her studies to the natural sciences, but also produced imaginative writings of which her father had a high opinion. She was mentally far superior to her numerous early admirers, and used to make jokes at their expense. In her early twenties, however, she began to be depressed, complained that she was not good-looking enough, and withdrew from all society. She was sent to travel in the company of an acquaintance, an elderly lady, and after her return told a number of most improbable stories of how she had been ill-treated by her companion, but remained with her affections obviously fixed upon her alleged tormentor. While she was on a second journey, soon afterwards, she poisoned herself and died far away from her home. Her uncle, her father’s brother, died after long years of life as an eccentric, pathic heredity in her family, but by no means the only one. An Onkel, Vaterbruder, starb nach langen Jahren einer Sonderlingsexistenz unter Zeichen, die auf eine schwere Zwangsneurose schlie-

Die Verführung und ihre nächsten Folgen

Die Verführung durch die Schwester war aber gewiß keine Phantasie. Ihre Glaubwürdigkeit wurde durch eine niemals vergessene Mitteilung aus späteren, reifen Jahren erhöht. Ein um mehr als ein Jahrzehnt älterer Vetter hatte ihm in einem Gespräch über die Schwester gesagt, er erinnere sich sehr wohl daran, was für ein vorwitzig sinnliches Ding sie gewesen sei. Als Kind von vier oder fünf Jahren habe sie sich einmal auf seinen Schoß gesetzt und ihm die Hose geöffnet, um nach seinem Glied zu greifen.

Ich möchte jetzt die Kindergeschichte meines Patienten unterbrechen, um von dieser Schwester, ihrer Entwicklung, weiteren Schicksalen und von ihrem Einfluß auf ihn zu sprechen. Sie war zwei Jahre älter als er und ihm immer vorausgeblieben. Als Kind babenhaft unbändig, schlug sie dann eine glänzende intellektuelle Entwicklung ein, zeichnete sich durch scharfen realistischen Verstand aus, bevorzugte die Naturwissenschaften in ihren Studien, produzierte aber auch Gedichte, die der Vater hoch einschätzte. Ihren zahlreichen ersten Bewerbern war sie geistig sehr überlegen, pflegte sich über sie lustig [zu] machen. In den ersten Zwanzigerjahren aber begann sie verstimmte zu werden, klagte, daß sie nicht schön genug sei, und zog sich von allem Umgang zurück. Auf eine Reise in Begleitung einer befreundeten älteren Dame geschickt, erzählte sie nach ihrer Heimkehr ganz unwahrscheinliche Dinge, wie sie von ihrer Begleiterin mißhandelt worden sei, blieb aber an die vorgebliche Peinigerin offenbar fixiert. Auf einer zweiten Reise bald nachher vergiftete sie sich und starb fern vom Hause. Wahrscheinlich entsprach ihre Affektion dem Beginne einer Dementia praecox. Sie war eine der Zeugen für die ansehnliche neuropathische Heredität in der Familie, keineswegs aber die einzige. Ein Onkel, Vaterbruder, starb nach langen Jahren einer Sonderlingsexistenz unter Zeichen, die auf eine schwere Zwangsneurose schlie-

obsessional neurosis; while a good number of collateral relatives were and are afflicted with less serious nervous complaints.

Independently of the question of seduction, our patient, while he was a child, found in his sister an inconvenient competitor for the good opinion of his parents, and he felt very much oppressed by her merciless display of superiority. Later on he especially envied her the respect which his father showed for her mental capacity and intellectual achievements, while he, intellectually inhibited as he was since his obsessional neurosis, had to be content with a lower estimation. From this fourteenth year onwards the relations between the brother and sister began to improve; a similar disposition of mind and a common opposition to their parents brought them so close together that they got on with each other like the best of friends. During the tempestuous sexual excitement of his puberty he ventured upon an attempt at an intimate physical approach. She rejected him with equal decision and dexterity, and he at once turned away from her to a little peasant girl who was a servant in the house and had the same name as his sister. In doing so he was taking a step which had a determinant influence on his heterosexual choice of object, for all the girls with whom he subsequently fell in love—often with the clearest indications of compulsion—were also servants, whose education and intelligence were necessarily far inferior to his own. If all of these objects of his love were substitutes for the figure of the sister whom he had to forgo, then it could not be denied that an intention of debasing his sister and of putting an end to her intellectual superiority, which he had formerly found so oppressive, had obtained the decisive control over his object-choice.1

Human sexual conduct, as well as everything else, has been subordinated by Alfred Adler to motive forces of this kind, which spring from the will to power, from the individual's self-assertive instinct. Without ever denying the importance of these motives of power and prerogative, I have never been convinced that they play the dominating and exclusive part that has been ascribed to them. If I had not pursued my patient's analysis to the end, I should have been obliged, on account of my observation of this case, to correct my preconceived opinion in a direction favourable to Adler. The conclusion of the analysis unexpectedly brought up new material which, on the contrary, 

1 [Cf. Freud's earlier paper on this subject (1912d).]

Motiven dieser Art, die dem Willen zur Macht, dem Behauptungstrieb des Individuums entstammen, hat Alf. Adler wie alles andere so auch das sexuelle Verhalten der Menschen untergeordnet. Ich bin, ohne die Geltung solcher Macht- und Vorrechts motive je zu leugnen, nie davon überzeugt gewesen, daß sie die ihnen zugeschriebene dominierende und ausschließliche Rolle spielen können. Hätte ich die Analyse meines Patienten nicht bis zu Ende geführt, so hätte ich die Beobachtung dieses Falles zum Anlaß nehmen müssen, um eine Korrektur meines Vorurteils im Sinne von Adler vorzunehmen. Unerwarteterweise brachte der Schluß dieser Analyse neues Material, aus dem sich wiederum ergab,
showed that these motives of power (in this case the intention to 
debase) had determined the object-choice only in the sense of 
serving as a contributory cause and as a rationalization, where-
as the true underlying determination enabled me to maintain 
my former convictions.

When the news of his sister’s death arrived, so the patient 
told me, he felt hardly a trace of grief. He had to force himself to 
show signs of sorrow, and was able quite coolly to rejoice at 
having now become the sole heir to the property. He had 
already been suffering from his recent illness for several years 
when this occurred. But I must confess that this one piece of in-
formation made me for a long time uncertain in my diagnostic 
judgement of the case. It was to be assumed, no doubt, that his 
grief over the loss of the most dearly loved member of his family 
would meet with an inhibition in its expression, as a result of the 
continued operation of his jealousy of her and of the added 
ence of his incestuous love for her which had now become uncon­ 
scious. But I could not do without some substitute for the missing 
outbursts of grief. And this was at last found in another expression 
of feeling which had remained inexplicable to the patient. A few 
months after his sister’s death he himself made a journey in the 
neighbourhood in which she had died. There he sought out 
the burial-place of a great poet, who was at that time his ideal, 
and shed bitter tears upon his grave. This reaction seemed 
strange to him himself, for he knew that more than two gener­

testen Mitglieds seiner Familie eine Ausdruckshebung durch die fort­ 
wirkende Eifersucht gegen sie und durch die Einmengung der unbewußt 
gewordenen incestuosen Verliebtheit erfahren würde, aber auf einen 
Ersatz für den unterbliebenen Schmerzausbruch vermachte ich nicht zu 
verzichten. Ein solcher fand sich endlich in einer anderen, ihm unver­ 
ständlich gebliebenen Gefühlsläuterung. Wenige Monate nach dem Tode 
der Schwester machte er selbst eine Reise in die Gegend, wo sie 
storben war, suchte dort das Grab eines großen Dichters auf, der damals 
sein Ideal war, und vergoss heiße Tränen auf diesem Grabe. Dies war 
eine auch ihn befremdende Reaktion, denn er wußte, daß mehr als zwei 
Menschenalter seit dem Tode des verehrten Dichters dahingehangen 
waren. Er verstand sie erst, als er sich erinnerte, daß der Vater die Ge­ 
dichte der verstorbenen Schwester mit denen des großen Poeten in 
Vergleich zu bringen pflegte. Einen anderen Hinweis auf die richtige 
Auffassung dieser scheinbar an den Dichter gerichteten Huldigung hatte 
ehr sich der Schwester erschossen habe, und mußte dann berichten, daß sie 
Gift genommen hatte. Der Poet aber war in einem Pistolenduell 
erschossen worden.

I now return to the brother’s story, but from this point I 
must proceed for a little upon thematic lines. The boy’s age at

1 See below, p. 93. [For a fuller discussion of Adler’s views, see Part III of ‘On the History of the Psycho-Analytic Movement’ (1914d).]

2 [No doubt Pushkin.]
the time at which his sister began her seductions turned out to be three and a quarter years.\footnote{[In the editions before 1924 this read 'from three and a quarter to three and a half years'.]} It happened, as has been mentioned, in the spring of the same year in whose summer the English governess arrived, and in whose autumn his parents, on their return, found him so fundamentally altered. It is very natural, then, to connect this transformation with the awakening of his sexual activity that had meanwhile taken place.

How did the boy react to the allurements of his elder sister? By a refusal, is the answer, but by a refusal which applied to the person and not to the thing. His sister was not agreeable to him as a sexual object, probably because his relation to her had already been determined in a hostile direction owing to their rivalry for their parents' love. He held aloof from her, and, moreover, her solicitations soon ceased. But he tried to win, instead of her, another person of whom he was fonder; and the information which his sister herself had given him, and in which she had claimed his Nanya as a model, turned his choice in that direction. He therefore began to play with his penis in his Nanya's presence, and this, like so many other instances in which children do not conceal their masturbation, must be regarded as an attempt at seduction. His Nanya disillusioned him; she made a serious face, and explained that that wasn't good; children who did that, she added, got a 'wound' in the place.

The effect of this intelligence, which amounted to a threat, is to be traced in various directions. His dependence upon his Nanya was diminished in consequence. He might well have been angry with her; and later on, when his fits of rage set in, it became clear that he really was embittered against her. But it was characteristic of him that every position of the libido which he found himself obliged to abandon was at first obstinately defended by him against the new development. When the governess came upon the scene and abused her out of the room, and tried to destroy her authority, he, on the contrary, exaggerated his love for the victim of these attacks and assumed a brusque and defiant attitude towards the aggressive governess. Nevertheless, in secret he began to look about for another sexual object. His seduction had given him the passive sexual aim of being touched on the genitals; we shall

Wie reagierte der Knabe auf die Verlockungen der älteren Schwester? Die Antwort lautet: mit Ablehnung, aber die Ablehnung galt der Person, nicht der Sache. Die Schwester war ihm als Sexualobjekt nicht genehm, wahrscheinlich, weil sein Verhältnis zu ihr bereits durch den Wettbewerb um die Liebe der Eltern im feindseligen Sinne bestimmt war. Er wischte ihr aus, und ihre Werbungen nahmen auch bald ein Ende. Aber er suchte an ihrer Statt eine andere, geliebtere Person zu gewinnen, und Mitteilungen der Schwester selbst, die sich auf das Vorbild der Nanja berufen hatte, lenkten seine Wahl auf diese. Er begann also vor der Nanja mit seinem Glied zu spielen, was, wie in so vielen anderen Fällen, wenn die Kinder die Onanie nicht verbergen, als Verführungsversuch aufgefaßt werden muß. Die Nanja enttäuschte ihn, sie machte ein ernstes Gesicht und erklärte, das sei nicht gut. Kinder, die das täten, bekämen an der Stelle eine »Wunde«.

Die Wirkung dieser Mitteilung, die einer Drohung gleichkam, ist nach verschiedenen Richtungen zu verfolgen. Seine Anhänglichkeit an die Nanja wurde dadurch gelockert. Er hätte böse auf sie werden können; später, als seine Wutanfälle einsetzten, zeigte es sich auch, daß er wirklich gegen sie erbittert war. Allein es war für ihn charakteristisch, daß er jede Libidopfalle, die er aufgeben sollte, zunächst hartnäckig gegen das Neue verteidigte. Als die Gouvernante auf dem Schauplatz erschien und die Nanja beschimpfte, aus dem Zimmer jagte, ihre Autorität vernichten wollte, übertrieb er vielmehr seine Liebe zu der Bedrohten und benahm sich abweisend und trotzig gegen die angreifende Gouvernante. Nichtsdestoweniger begann er im geheimen ein anderes Sexualobjekt zu suchen. Die Verführung hatte ihm das passive Sexualziel gegeben, an
presently hear in connection with whom it was that he tried to achieve this aim, and what paths led him to this choice.

It agrees entirely with our anticipations when we learn that, after his first genital excitations, his sexual researches began, and that he soon came upon the problem of castration. At this time he succeeded in observing two girls—his sister and a friend of hers—while they were micturating. His acumen might well have enabled him to gather the true facts from this spectacle, but he behaved as we know other male children behave in these circumstances. He rejected the idea that he saw before him a confirmation of the wound with which his Nanya had threatened him, and he explained to himself that this was the girls ‘front bottom’. The theme of castration was not settled by this decision; he found new allusions to it in everything that he heard. Once when the children were given some coloured sugar-sticks, the governess, who was inclined to disordered fancies, pronounced that they were pieces of chopped-up snakes. He remembered afterwards that his father had once beaten it to pieces with his stick. He heard the story (out of *Reynard the Fox*) read aloud, of how the wolf wanted to go fishing in the winter, and used his tail as a bait, and how in that way his tail was broken off in the ice. He learned the different names by which horses are distinguished, according to whether their sexual organs are intact or not. Thus he was occupied with thoughts about castration, but as yet he had no belief in it and no dread of it. Other sexual problems arose for him out of the fairy tales with which he became familiar at this time. In 'Little Red Riding-Hood' and 'The Seven Little Goats' the children were taken out of the wolf’s body. Was the wolf a female creature, then, or could men have children in their bodies as well? At this time the question was not yet settled. Moreover, at the time of these enquiries he had as yet no fear of wolves.

One of the patient’s pieces of information will make it easier for us to understand the alteration in his character which appeared during his parents’ absence as a somewhat indirect consequence of his seduction. He said that he gave up masturb-bating very soon after his Nanya’s refusal and threat. *His sexual life, therefore, which was beginning to come under the sway of the genital zone, gave way before an external obstacle, and was thrown back by its influence into an earlier phase of pregenital organization. As a result of
den Genitalien berührt zu werden; wir werden hören, bei wem er dies erreichen wollte, und welche Wege ihn zu dieser Wahl führten.


Eine der Mitteilungen des Patienten wird uns den Weg zum Verständnis der Charakterveränderung bahnen, die während der Abwesenheit der Eltern im entferntesten Anschluß an die Verführung bei ihm hervor trat. Er erzählt, daß er nach der Abweisung und Drohung der Nanja die Onanie sehr bald aufgab. *Das beginnende Sexualleben unter der Leitung der Genitalzone war also einer äußeren Hemmung erlegen und durch deren Einfluß auf eine frühere Phase prägenitaler Organisation zurückgeworfen worden.* Infolge
the suppression of his masturbation, the boy's sexual life took on a sadistic-anal character. He became irritable and a tormentor, and gratified himself in this way at the expense of animals and humans. His principal object was his beloved Nanya, and he knew how to torment her till she burst into tears. In this way he revenged himself on her for the refusal he had met with, and at the same time gratified his sexual lust in the form which corresponded to his present regressive phase. He began to be cruel to small animals, to catch flies and pull off their wings, to crush beetles underfoot; in his imagination he liked beating large animals (horses) as well. All of these, then, were active and sadistic proceedings; we shall discuss his anal impulses at this period in a later connection.

It is a most important fact that some contemporary phantasies of quite another kind came up as well in the patient's memory. The content of these was of boys being chastised and beaten, and especially being beaten on the penis. And from other phantasies, which represented the heir to the throne being shut up in a narrow room and beaten, it was easy to guess for whom it was that the anonymous figures served as whipping-boys. The heir to the throne was evidently he himself; his sadism had therefore turned round in phantasy against himself, and had been converted into masochism. The detail of the sexual organ itself receiving the beating justified the conclusion that a sense of guilt, which related to his masturbation, was already concerned in this transformation.1

No doubt was left in the analysis that these passive trends had made their appearance at the same time as the active-sadistic ones, or very soon after them. This is in accordance with the unusually clear, intense, and constant ambivalence of the patient, which was shown here for the first time in the even development of both members of the pairs of contrary component instincts. Such behaviour was also characteristic of his later life, and so was this further trait: no position of the libido which had once

1 [On the subject of beating-phantasies see Freud (1919e), below, p. 179 ff.]

1 By passive trends I mean trends that have a passive sexual aim; but in saying this I have in mind a transformation not of the instinct but only of its aim.

* This exceptional use of the term 'ambivalence' as referring to activity and passivity is discussed in an Editor's footnote in 'Instincts and their Viciousitudes' (1915c).]
been established was ever completely replaced by a later one. It was rather left in existence side by side with all the others, and this allowed him to maintain an incessant vacillation which proved to be incompatible with the acquisition of a stable character.

The boy's masochistic trends lead on to another point, which I have so far avoided mentioning, because it can only be confirmed by means of the analysis of the subsequent phase of his development. I have already mentioned that after his refusal by his Nanya his libidinal expectation detached itself from her and began to contemplate another person as a sexual object. This person was his father, at that time away from home. He was no doubt led to this choice by a number of convergent factors, including such fortuitous ones as the recollection of the snake being cut to pieces; but above all he was in this way able to renew his first and most primitive object-choice, which, in conformity with a small child's narcissism, had taken place along the path of identification. 1 We have heard already that his father had been his admired model, and that when he was asked what he wanted to be he used to reply: a gentleman like his father. This object of identification of his active current became the sexual object of a passive current in his present anal-sadistic phase. It looks as though his seduction by his sister had forced him into a passive role, and had given him a passive sexual aim. Under the persisting influence of this experience he pursued a path from his sister via his Nanya to his father—from a passive attitude towards women to the same attitude towards men—and had, nevertheless, by this means found a link with his earlier and spontaneous phase of development. His father was now his object once more; in conformity with his higher stage of development, identification was replaced by object-choice; while the transformation of his active attitude into a passive one was the consequence and the record of the seduction which had occurred meanwhile. It would naturally not have been so easy to achieve an active attitude in the sadistic phase towards his all-powerful father. When his father came home in the late summer or autumn the patient's fits of rage and scenes of fury were put to a new use. They had served for active-sadistic ends in relation to his Nanya; in relation to his father the late summer or autumn the patient's fits of rage and scenes of fury were put to a new use. They had served for active-sadistic ends in relation to his Nanya; in relation to his father of fury were put to a new use. They had served for his first and most primitive object-choice, which, in conformity with a small child's narcissism, had taken place along the path of identification. 1 We have heard already that his father had been his admired model, and that when he was asked what he wanted to be he used to reply: a gentleman like his father. This object of identification of his active current became the sexual object of a passive current in his present anal-sadistic phase. It looks as though his seduction by his sister had forced him into a passive role, and had given him a passive sexual aim. Under the persisting influence of this experience he pursued a path from his sister via his Nanya to his father—from a passive attitude towards women to the same attitude towards men—and had, nevertheless, by this means found a link with his earlier and spontaneous phase of development. His father was now his object once more; in conformity with his higher stage of development, identification was replaced by object-choice; while the transformation of his active attitude into a passive one was the consequence and the record of the seduction which had occurred meanwhile. It would naturally not have been so easy to achieve an active attitude in the sadistic phase towards his all-powerful father. When his father came home in the late summer or autumn the patient's fits of rage and scenes of fury were put to a new use. They had served for active-sadistic ends in relation to his Nanya; in relation to his father

1 [For a fuller discussion of identification see Chapter VII of Group Psychology (1921c).]

s.p. xvii—c

Die Verführung und ihre nächsten Folgen durch eine spätere völlig aufgehoben wurde. Sie blieb vielmehr neben allen anderen bestehen und gestattete ihm ein unausgesetztes Schwanken, welches sich mit dem Erwerb eines fixierten Charakters unvereinbar erwies.

Die masochistischen Strebungen des Knaben leiten zu einem anderen Punkt über, dessen Erwähnung ich mir aufgespart habe, weil er erst durch die Analyse der nächstfolgenden Phase seiner Entwicklung sicher­gestellt werden kann. Ich erwähnte schon, daß er nach der Abweisung durch die Nanja seine libidinöse Erwartung von ihr löste und eine andere Person als Sexualobjekt in Aussicht nahm. Diese Person war der damals abwesende Vater. Zu dieser Wahl wurde er gewiß durch ein Zusammen­treffen von Momenten geführt, auch durch zufällige wie die Erinnerung an die Zerstückelung der Schlange; vor allem aber erneuerte er damit seine erste und ursprünglichste Objektwahl, die sich dem Narzissmus des kleinen Kindes entsprechend auf dem Wege der Identifizierung voll­zogen hatte. 2 Wir haben schon gehört, daß der Vater sein bewundertes Vorbild gewesen war, daß er, gefragt, was er werden wollte, zu ant­worten pflegte: ein Herr wie der Vater. Dies Identifizierungsobjekt seiner aktiven Strömung wurde nun das Sexualobjekt einer passiven Strömung in der sadistik-analen Phase. Es macht den Eindruck, als hätte ihn die Verführung durch die Schwester in die passive Rolle ge­drängt und ihm ein passives Sexualziel gegeben. Unter dem fortwirkenden Einfluß dieses Erlebnisses beschrieb er nun den Weg von der Schwest­er über die Nanja zum Vater, von der passiven Einstellung zum Weib bis zu der zum Manne und hatte dabei doch die Anknüpfung an seine frühere spontane Entwicklungsphase gefunden. Der Vater war jetzt wieder sein Objekt, die Identifizierung war der höheren Entwicklung entsprechend durch Objektwahl abgelöst, die Verwandlung der aktiven in eine passive Einstellung war der Erfolg und das Zeichen der dazwi­schen vorgefallenen Verführung. Eine aktive Einstellung gegen den übermächtigen Vater in der sadistischen Phase wäre natürlich nicht so leicht durchführbar gewesen. Als der Vater im Spätsommer oder Herbst zurückkam, bekamen seine Wutanfälle und Tobszenen eine neue Verwendung. Gegen die Nanja hatten sie aktiv-sadistischen Zwecken ge­dient; gegen den Vater

2 [Eine ausführlichere Diskussion des Themas Identifizierung findet sich im Kap. VII der Massenpsychologie (1921c).]
their purpose was masochistic. By bringing his naughtiness forward he was trying to force punishments and beatings out of his father, and in that way to obtain from him the masochistic sexual satisfaction that he desired. His screaming fits were therefore simply attempts at seduction. In accordance, moreover, his father, and in that way to obtain from him the masochistic ward he was trying to force punishments and beatings out of also have satisfied his sense of guilt. He had preserved a memory of how, during one of these scenes of naughtiness, he had redoubled his screams as soon as his father came towards him. His father did not beat him, however, but tried to pacify him by playing ball in front of him with the pillows of his cot.

I do not know how often parents and educators, faced with inexplicable naughtiness on the part of a child, might not have occasion to bear this typical state of affairs in mind. A child who behaves in this unmanageable way is making a confession and trying to provoke punishment. He hopes for a beating as a simultaneous means of setting his sense of guilt at rest and of satisfying his masochistic sexual trend.1

We owe the further explanation of the case to a recollection which emerged with great distinctness. This was to the effect that the signs of an alteration in the patient's character were not accompanied by any symptoms of anxiety until after the occurrence of a particular event. Previously, it seems, there was no anxiety, while directly after the event the anxiety expressed itself in the most tormenting shape. The date of this transformation can be stated with certainty; it was immediately before his fourth birthday. Taking this as a fixed point, we are able to divide the period of his childhood with which we are concerned into two phases: a first phase of naughtiness and perversity from his seduction at the age of three and a quarter up to his fourth birthday, and a longer subsequent phase in which the signs of neurosis predominated. But the event which makes this division possible was not an external trauma, but a dream, from which he awoke in a state of anxiety.

1 [Cf. Freud's discussion of 'Criminals from a Sense of Guilt' which forms the third Section of his paper 'Some Character-Types Met with in Psycho-Analytic Work' (1916d).]

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose


Ich weiß nicht, wie oft die Eltern und Erzieher angesichts der unerklärlichen Schlimmheit des Kindes Anlaß hätten, sich dieses typischen Zusammenhanges zu erinnern. Das Kind, das sich so unbändig benimmt, legt ein Geständnis ab und will Strafe provozieren. Es sucht in der Züchtigung gleichzeitig die Beschwichtigung seines Schuldbewußtseins und die Befriedigung seiner masochistischen Sexualstrebung.1


1 [Vgl. Freuds Darstellung des 'Verbrechers aus Schuldbewußtsein', die den Abschnitt III seiner Arbeit 'Einige Charaktertypen aus der psychoanalytischen Arbeit' bildet (1916d).]
THE DREAM AND THE PRIMAL SCENE

I have already published this dream elsewhere,¹ on account of the quantity of material in it which is derived from fairy tales; and I will begin by repeating what I wrote on that occasion:

"I dreamt that it was night and that I was lying in my bed. (My bed stood with its foot towards the window; in front of the window there was a row of old walnut trees. I knew it was winter when I had the dream, and night-time.) Suddenly the window opened of its own accord, and I was terrified to see that some white wolves were sitting on the big walnut tree in front of the window. There were six or seven of them. The wolves were quite white, and looked more like foxes or sheep-dogs, for they had big tails like foxes and they had their ears pricked like dogs when they pay attention to something. In great terror, evidently of being eaten up by the wolves, I screamed and woke up. My nurse hurried to my bed, to see what had happened to me. It took quite a long while before I was convinced that it had only been a dream; I had had such a clear and life-like picture of the window opening and the wolves sitting on the tree. At last I grew quieter, felt as though I had escaped from some danger, and went to sleep again.

"The only piece of action in the dream was the opening of the window; for the wolves sat quite still and without making any movement on the branches of the tree, to the right and left of the trunk, and looked at me. It seemed as though they had riveted their whole attention upon me.— I think this was my first anxiety-dream. I was three, four, or at most five years old at the time. From then until my eleventh or twelfth year I was always afraid of seeing something terrible in my dreams."

He added a drawing of the tree with the wolves, which confirmed his description (Fig. 1). The analysis of the dream brought the following material to light.

He had always connected this dream with the recollection that during these years of his childhood he was most tremendously afraid of the picture of a wolf in a book of fairy tales. His elder sister, who was very much his superior, used to tease him by holding up this particular picture in front of him on

¹ The Occurrence in Dreams of Material from Fairy Tales' (1913d).
some excuse or other, so that he was terrified and began to scream. In this picture the wolf was standing upright, striding out with one foot, with its claws stretched out and its ears pricked. He thought this picture must have been an illustration to the story of "Little Red Riding-Hood".

'Why were the wolves white? This made him think of the sheep, large flocks of which were kept in the neighbourhood of the estate. His father occasionally took him with him to visit these flocks, and every time this happened he felt very proud and blissful. Later on—according to enquiries that were made it may easily have been shortly before the time of the dream—an epidemic broke out among the sheep. His father sent for a follower of Pasteur's, who inoculated the animals, but after the inoculation even more of them died than before.

'How did the wolves come to be on the tree? This reminded him of a story that he had heard his grandfather tell. He could not remember whether it was before or after the dream, but its subject is a decisive argument in favour of the former view. The story ran as follows. A tailor was sitting at work in his room, when the window opened and a wolf leapt in. The tailor hit
after him with his yard—no (he corrected himself), caught him by his tail and pulled it off, so that the wolf ran away in terror. Some time later the tailor went into the forest, and suddenly saw a pack of wolves coming towards him; so he climbed up a tree to escape from them. At first the wolves were in perplexity; but the maimed one, which was among them and wanted to revenge himself on the tailor, proposed that they should climb one upon another till the last one could reach him. He himself—he was a vigorous old fellow—would be the base of the pyramid. The wolves did as he suggested, but the tailor had recognized the visitor whom he had punished, and suddenly called out as he had before: “Catch the grey one by his tail!” The tailless wolf, terrified by the recollection, ran away, and all the others tumbled down.

‘In this story the tree appears, upon which the wolves were sitting in the dream. But it also contains an unmistakable allusion to the castration complex. The old wolf was docked of his tail by the tailor. The fox-tails of the wolves in the dream were probably compensations for this taillessness.

‘Why were there six or seven wolves? There seemed to be no answer to this question, until I raised a doubt whether the picture that had frightened him could be connected with the story of “Little Red Riding-Hood”. This fairy tale only offers an opportunity for two illustrations—Little Red Riding-Hood’s meeting with the wolf in the wood, and the scene in which the wolf lies in bed in the grandmother’s night-cap. There must therefore be some other fairy tale behind his recollection of the picture. He soon discovered that it could only be the story of “The Wolf and the Seven Little Goats”. Here the number seven occurs, and also the number six, for the wolf only ate up six of the little goats, while the seventh hid itself in the clock-case. The white, too, comes into this story, for the wolf had his paw made white at the baker’s after the little goats had recognized him on his first visit by his grey paw. Moreover, the two fairy tales have much in common. In both there is the eating up, the cutting open of the belly, the taking out of the people who have been eaten and their replacement by heavy stones, and finally in both of them the wicked wolf perishes. Besides all this, in the story of the little goats the tree appears. The wolf lay down under a tree after his meal and snored.

‘I shall have, for a special reason, to deal with this dream


In dieser Erzählung findet sich der Baum vor, auf dem im Traum die Wölfe sitzen. Sie enthält aber auch eine unzweideutige Anknüpfung an den Kastrationskomplex. Der alte Wolf ist vom Schneider um den Schwanz gebracht worden. Die Fuchsschwänze der Wölfe im Traum sind wohl Kompensationen dieser Schwanzlosigkeit.


Ich werde mich mit diesem Traum wegen eines besonderen Umstandes
again elsewhere, and interpret it and consider its significance in greater detail. For it is the earliest anxiety-dream that the dreamer remembered from his childhood, and its content, taken in connection with other dreams that followed it soon afterwards and with certain events in his earliest years, is of quite peculiar interest. We must confine ourselves here to the relation of the dream to the two fairy tales which have so much in common with each other, “Little Red Riding-Hood” and “The Wolf and the Seven Little Goats”. The effect produced by these stories was shown in the little dreamer by a regular animal phobia. This phobia was only distinguished from other similar cases by the fact that the anxiety-animal was not an object easily accessible to observation (such as a horse or a dog), but was known to him only from stories and picture-books.

‘I shall discuss on another occasion the explanation of these animal phobias and the significance attaching to them. I will only remark in anticipation that this explanation is in complete harmony with the principal characteristic shown by the neurosis from which the present dreamer suffered later in his life. His fear of his father was the strongest motive for his falling ill, and his ambivalent attitude towards every father-surrogate was the dominating feature of his life as well as of his behaviour during the treatment.

‘If in my patient’s case the wolf was merely a first father-surrogate, the question arises whether the hidden content in the fairy tales of the wolf that ate up the little goats and of “Little Red Riding-Hood” may not simply be infantile fear of the father. Moreover, my patient’s father had the characteristic, shown by so many people in relation to their children, of indulging in “affectionate abuse”; and it is possible that during the patient’s earlier years his father (though he grew severe later on) may more than once, as he caressed the little boy or played with him, have threatened in fun to “gobble him up”. One of my patients told me that her two children could never get to be fond of their grandfather, because in the course of his affectionate romping with them he used to frighten them by saying he would cut open their tummies.’

Leaving on one side everything in this quotation that antici-

1 ‘Compare the similarity between these two fairy tales and the myth of Kronos, which has been pointed out by Rank (1912).’

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose

noch an anderer Stelle beschäftigen müssen und ihn dann eingehender deuten und würdigen. Es ist ja ein erster aus der Kindheit erinnerter Angstraum, dessen Inhalt im Zusammenhang mit anderen Träumen, die bald nachher erfolgten, und mit gewissen Begebenheiten in der Kinderzeit des Träumers ein Interesse von ganz besonderer Art wahrhaft. Hier beschränken wir uns auf die Beziehung des Träumes zu zwei Märchen, die viel Gemeines haben, zum »Rotkäppchen« und zum »Wolf und die sieben Geißlein«. Der Eindruck dieser Märchen äußerte sich bei dem kindlichen Träumer in einer richtigen Tierphobie, die sich von anderen ähnlichen Fällen nur dadurch auszeichnete, daß das Angsttier nicht ein der Wahrnehmung leicht zugängliches Objekt war (wie etwa Pferd und Hund), sondern nur aus Erzählung und Bilder­buch gekannt.


Lassen wir nun all das beiseite, was in diesem Aufsatz der Verwertung
pates the dream’s remotest implications, let us return to its immediate interpretation. I may remark that this interpretation was a task that dragged on over several years. The patient related the dream at a very early stage of the analysis and very soon came to share my conviction that the causes of his infantile neurosis lay concealed behind it. In the course of the treatment we often came back to the dream, but it was only during the last months of the analysis that it became possible to understand it completely, and only then thanks to spontaneous work on the patient’s part. He had always emphasized the fact that two factors in the dream had made the greatest impression on some part of the latent material of the dream: first, the perfect stillness and immobility of the wolves, and secondly, the strained attention with which they all looked at him. The lasting sense of reality, too, which the dream left behind it, seemed to him to deserve notice.

Let us take this last remark as a starting-point. We know from our experience in interpreting dreams that this sense of reality carries a particular significance along with it. It assures us that some part of the latent material of the dream is claiming in the dreamer’s memory to possess the quality of reality, that is, that the dream relates to an occurrence that really took place and was not merely imagined. It can naturally only be a question of the reality of something unknown; for instance, the conviction that his grandfather really told him the story of the tailor and the wolf, or that the stories of ‘Little Red Riding-Hood’ and of ‘The Seven Little Goats’ were really read aloud to him, would not be of a nature to be replaced by this sense of reality that outlasted the dream. The dream seemed to point to an occurrence the reality of which was very strongly emphasized as being in marked contrast to the unreality of the fairy tales.

If it was to be assumed that behind the content of the dream there lay some such unknown scene—one, that is, which had already been forgotten at the time of the dream—then it must have taken place very early. The dreamer, it will be recalled, said: ‘I was three, four, or at most five years old at the time I had the dream.’ And we can add: ‘And I was reminded by the dream of something that must have belonged to an even earlier period.’

The parts of the manifest content of the dream which were

1 [See The Interpretation of Dreams (1900a), Standard Ed., 5, 372.]
emphasized by the dreamer, the factors of attentive looking and of motionlessness, must lead to the content of this scene. We must naturally expect to find that this material reproduces the unknown material of the scene in some distorted form, perhaps even distorted into its opposite.

There were several conclusions, too, to be drawn from the raw material which had been produced by the patient's first analysis of the dream, and these had to be fitted into the collocation of which we were in search. Behind the mention of the sheep-breeding, evidence was to be expected of his sexual analysis of the dream, and these had to be fitted into the collocation of which we were in search. Behind the mention of the searches, his interest in which he was able to gratify during his visits with his father; but there must also have been allusions to a fear of death, since the greater part of the sheep had died of epidemic. The most obtrusive thing in the dream, the wolves on the tree, led straight to his grandfather's story; and what was fascinating about this story and capable of provoking the dream can scarcely have been anything but its connection with the dream that the wolf may have been a father-surrogate; so that, in that case, this first anxiety-dream would have brought to light the fear of his father which from that time forward was to dominate his life. This conclusion, indeed, was in itself not yet binding. But if we put together as the result of the provisional analysis what can be derived from the material produced by the dreamer, we then find before us for reconstruction some such fragments as these:

_A real occurrence—dating from a very early period—looking—immobility—sexual problems—castration—his father—something terrible._

One day the patient began to continue with the interpretation of the dream. He thought that the part of the dream which said 'suddenly the window opened of its own accord' was not completely explained by its connection with the window at which the tailor was sitting and through which the wolf came into the room. 'It must mean: "My eyes suddenly opened." I was asleep, therefore, and suddenly woke up, and as I woke I saw something: the tree with the wolves.' No objection could be made to this; but the point could be developed further. He had woken up and had seen something. The attentive looking, which in the dream was ascribed to the wolves, should rather be shifted on to him. At a decisive point, therefore, a trans-

_Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose_

festen Trauminhalt hervorhob, die Momente des aufmerksam Schauens und der Bewegungslosigkeit. Wir erwarten natürlich, daß dies Material das unbekannte Material der Szene in irgendeiner Entstellung wiederbringt, vielleicht sogar in der Entstellung zur Gegensätzlichkeit.

Aus dem Rohstoff, welchen die erste Analyse mit dem Patienten ergeben hatte, waren gleichfalls mehrere Schlüsse zu ziehen, die in den gesuchten Zusammenhang einzufügen waren. Hinter der Erwähnung der Schafzucht waren die Belege für seine Sexualforschung zu suchen, deren Interessen er bei seinen Besuchen mit dem Vater befriedigen konnte, aber auch Andeutungen von Todesangst mußten dabei sein, denn die Schafe waren ja zum größten Teil an der Seuche gestorben. Was im Traum das vordringlichere war, die Wölfe auf dem Baume, führte direkt zur Erzählung des Großvaters, an welcher kaum etwas anderes als die Ankniüpfung an das Kastrationsthema das Fesselnde und den Traum Anregende gewesen sein konnte.

Wir hatten aus der ersten unvollständigen Analyse des Traumes ferner erschlossen, daß der Wolf ein Vaterersatz sei, so daß dieser erste Angstraum jene Angst vor dem Vater zum Vorschein gebracht hätte, welche von nun an sein Leben beherrschen sollte. Dieser Schluß selbst war allerdings noch nicht verbindlich. Wenn wir aber als Ergebnis der vorläufigen Analyse zusammenstellen, was sich aus dem vom Träumer gelieferten Material ableitet, so liegen uns etwa folgende Brudstücke zur Rekonstruktion vor:

_Eine wirkliche Begebenheit — aus sehr früher Zeit — Schauen — Unbewegtheit — Sexualprobleme — Kastration — der Vater — etwas Schreckliches._

Eines Tages begann der Patient die Deutung des Traumes fortzusetzen. Die Stelle des Traumes, meinte er, in der es heißt: Plötzlich geht das Fenster von selbst auf, ist durch die Beziehung zum Fenster, an dem der Schneider sitzt, und durch das der Wolf ins Zimmer kommt, nicht ganz aufgeklärt. Es muß die Bedeutung haben: die Augen gehen plötzlich auf. Also ich schlafe und erwache plötzlich, dabei sehe ich etwas: den Baum mit den Wölfen. Dagegen war nichts einzuwenden, aber es ließ weitere Ausnutzung zu. Er war erwacht und hatte etwas zu sehen bekommen. Das aufmerksame Schauen, das im Traum den Wölfen zugeschrieben wird, ist vielmehr auf ihn zu schieben. Da hatte an einem entscheiden-
position has taken place; and moreover this is indicated by another transposition in the manifest content of the dream. For the fact that the wolves were sitting on the tree was also a transposition, since in his grandfather’s story they were underneath, and were unable to climb on to the tree.

What, then, if the other factor emphasized by the dreamer were also distorted by means of a transposition or reversal? In that case instead of immobility (the wolves sat there motionless; they looked at him, but did not move) the meaning would have to be: the most violent motion. That is to say, he suddenly woke up, and saw in front of him a scene of violent movement at which he looked with strained attention. In the one case the distortion would consist in an interchange of subject and object, of activity and passivity: being looked at instead of looking. In the other case it would consist in a transformation into the opposite; rest instead of motion.

On another occasion an association which suddenly occurred to him carried us another step forward in our understanding of the dream: ‘The tree was a Christmas-tree.’ He now knew that he had dreamt the dream shortly before Christmas and in expectation of it. Since Christmas Day was also his birthday, it now became possible to establish with certainty the date of the dream and of the change in him which proceeded from it. It was immediately before his fourth birthday. He had gone to sleep, then, in tense expectation of the day which ought to bring him a double quantity of presents. We know that in such circumstances a child may easily anticipate the fulfilment of his wishes. So it was already Christmas in his dream; the content of the dream showed him his Christmas box, the presents which were to be his were hanging on the tree. But instead of presents they had turned into—wolves, and the dream ended by his being overcome by fear of being eaten by the wolf (probably his father), and by his flying for refuge to his nurse. Our knowledge of his sexual development before the dream makes it possible for us to fill in the gaps in the dream and to explain the transformation of his satisfaction into anxiety. Of the wishes concerned in the formation of the dream the most powerful must have been the wish for the sexual satisfaction which he was at that time longing to obtain from his father. The strength of this wish

made it possible to revive a long-forgotten trace in his memory of a scene which was able to show him what sexual satisfaction from his father was like; and the result was terror, horror of the fulfilment of the wish, the repression of the impulse which had manifested itself by means of the wish, and consequently a flight from his father to his less dangerous nurse.

The importance of this date of Christmas Day had been preserved in his supposed recollection of having had his first fit of rage because he was dissatisfied with his Christmas presents [p. 15]. The recollection combined elements of truth and of falsehood. It could not be entirely right, since according to the declarations of his parents his naughtiness had already begun on their return in the autumn and it was not a fact that they had not come on till Christmas. But he had preserved the essential connection between his unsatisfied love, his rage, and Christmas.

But what picture can the nightly workings of his sexual desire have conjured up that could frighten him away so violently from the fulfilment for which he longed? The material of the analysis shows that there is one condition which this picture must satisfy. It must have been calculated to create a conviction of the reality of the existence of castration. Fear of castration could then become the motive power for the transformation of the affect.

I have now reached the point at which I must abandon the support I have hitherto had from the course of the analysis. I am afraid it will also be the point at which the reader’s belief will abandon me.

What sprang into activity that night out of the chaos of the dreamer’s unconscious memory-traces was the picture of copulation between his parents, copulation in circumstances which were not entirely usual and were especially favourable for observation. It gradually became possible to find satisfactory answers to all the questions that arose in connection with this scene; for in the course of the treatment the first dream returned in innumerable variations and new editions, in connection with which the analysis produced the information that was required. Thus in the first place the child’s age at the date of the observation was established as being about one and a half years.1 He

1 The age of six months came under consideration as a far less probable, and indeed scarcely tenable, alternative.

---

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose

Wünsches gelang es, die längst vergessene Erinnerungsspuren einer Szene aufzufrischen, die ihm zeigen konnte, wie die Sexualbefriedigung durch den Vater ausnahm, und das Ergebnis war Schreck, Entsetzen vor der Erfüllung dieses Wunsches, Verdrängung der Regung, die sich durch diesen Wunsch dargestellt hatte, und darum Flucht vom Vater weg zur ungefährlichsten Kinderfrau.


Hier kommt nun die Stelle, an der ich die Anlehnung an den Verlauf der Analyse verlassen muß. Ich fürchte, es wird auch die Stelle sein, an der der Glaube der Leser mich verlassen wird.

Was in jener Nacht aus dem Chaos der unbewußten Eindruckspuren aktiviert wurde, war das Bild eines Koisus zwischen den Eltern unter nicht ganz gewöhnlichen und für die Beobachtung besonders günstigen Umständen. Es gelang allmählich, für alle Fragen, die sich an diese Szene knüpften konnten, befriedigende Antworten zu erhalten, indem jener erste Traum im Verlauf der Kur in ungezählten Abänderungen und Neuauflagen wiederkehrte, zu denen die Analyse die gewünschten Aufklärungen lieferte. So stellte sich zunächst das Alter des Kindes bei der Beobachtung heraus, etwa 11/2 Jahre1. Er

1 Daneben käme mit weit geringer Wahrscheinlichkeit, eigentlich kaum haltbar, das Alter von 1/4 Jahr in Betracht.
was suffering at the time from malaria, an attack of which used
to come on every day at a particular hour. From his tenth year
onwards he was from time to time subject to moods of de-
pression, which used to come on in the afternoon and reached
their height at about five o'clock. This symptom still existed at
the time of the analytic treatment. The recurring fits of de-
pression took the place of the earlier attacks of fever or languor;
five o'clock was either the time of the highest fever or of the
observation of the intercourse, unless the two times coin-
cided. Probably for the very reason of this illness, he was in his
parents' bedroom. The illness, the occurrence of which is also
corroborated by direct tradition, makes it reasonable to refer
the event to the summer, and, since the child was born on
Christmas Day, to assume that

1 Compare the subsequent metamorphoses of this factor during the
obsessional neurosis. In the patient's dreams during the treat-
ment it was replaced by a violent wind. [Added 1924:] 'Aria' = 'air'. ['Mal-aria'
= 'bad air'.]

2 It might perhaps be clearer to say 'n + ½'. The point is that owing
to the interval of 6 months between the patient's birthday and the
summer, his age at the time of the trauma must have been 0 years + 6
months, or 1 year + 6 months, or 2 years + 6 months, etc. The 0 + ½ is,
however, already excluded in the footnote on p. 36.

3 In white underclothes: the white wolves.

4 Why three times? He suddenly one day produced the statement that
I had discovered this detail by interpretation. This was not the case. It
was a spontaneous association, exempt from further criticism; in his
usual way he passed it off on to me, and by this projection tried to make
it seem more trustworthy.

5 I mean that he understood it at the time of the dream when he was
four years old, not at the time of the observation. He received the
impressions when he was one and a half; his understanding of them was

6 There were three times repeated; 6 he

7 Why three times? He suddenly one day produced the statement that
I had discovered this detail by interpretation. This was not the case. It
was a spontaneous association, exempt from further criticism; in his
usual way he passed it off on to me, and by this projection tried to make
it seem more trustworthy.

8 I mean that he understood it at the time of the dream when he was
four years old, not at the time of the observation. He received the
impressions when he was one and a half; his understanding of them was

Deutsche Übersetzung:

Der Traum und die Urszene

... litt damals an einer
Malaria, deren Anfall täglich zu bestimmter Stunde wiederkherzte. 
Von seinem zehnten Jahr an war er zeitweise Stimmungen von Depres-
sionen unterworfen, die am Nachmittag einsetzten und um die für-
fte Stunde ihre Höhe erreichten. Dieses Symptom bestand noch zur Zeit
der analytischen Behandlung. Die wiederkehrende Depression ersetzte
den damaligen Fieber- oder Mattigkeitsanfall; die fünfte Stunde war
entweder die Zeit der Fieberhöhe oder die der Koitusbeobachtung,
wenn nicht beide Zeiten zusammenfallen. Er befand sich wahrschein-
lich gerade dieses Krankseins wegen im Zimmer der Eltern. Diese auch
durch direkte Tradition erhärtete Erkrankung legt uns nahe, den Vor-
fall in den Sommer zu verlegen und damit für den am Weihnachtstag
Geboren ein Alter von n + 1½ Jahren anzunehmen. Er hatte also
im Zimmer der Eltern in seinem Bettchen geschlafen und erwachte, etwa
infolge des steigenden Fiebers, am Nachmittag, vielleicht um die später
through Depression ausgezeichnete fünfte Stunde. Es stimmt zur Annahme
eines heißen Sommertages, wenn sich die Eltern halb entkleidet zu einem
Nachmittagsschlafenden zurückgezogen hätten. Als er erwachte, wurde er
Zeuge eines dreimal wiederholten coitus a tergo, konnte das Genitale
der Mutter wie das Glied des Vaters sehen und verstand den Vorgang
wie dessen Bedeutung. Endlich

1 Vgl. die späteren Umbildungen dieses Moments in der Zwangsneurose. In den
Träumen während der Kur Ersetzung durch einen heftigen Wind. [Zweis 1942.]

2 Man bringe damit zusammen, daß der Patient zu seinem Traum nur fünf Wölfe ge-
ingesehen hat, obwohl der Text des Träumes von 6 oder 7 spricht.

3 [Noch deutlicher wäre vielleicht n + 1½. Da zwischen dem Geburtstag des Pa-
tienten und dem Sommer 6 Monate liegen, muß er zur Zeit des Traumes 0 Jahre + 6
Monate oder 1 Jahr + 6 Monate, 2 Jahre + 6 Monate usw. alt gewesen sein. Das
Alter 0 + 6 Monate hat Freud jedoch in der Anmerkung 1 auf S. 156 bereits ausge-
schlossen.]

4 In weißer Wäsche, die weißen Wölfe.

5 Woher dreimal? Er stellte plötzlich einmal die Behauptung auf, daß ich dieses Detail
durch Deutung erürt hätte. Das traf nicht zu. Es war ein spontaner, weiter Kritik
entgegengesetzter Einfall, der nach seiner Gewohnheit mir zuschob und ihn durch diese
Projektion vertrauenswürdig macht.

6 Ich meine, er verstand ihn zur Zeit des Träumes mit 4 Jahren, nicht zur Zeit der
Beobachtung. Mit 1½ Jahren holte er sich die Eindrücke, deren nachträgliches Ver-
He interrupted his parents' intercourse in a manner which will be discussed later [p. 80].

There is at bottom nothing extraordinary, nothing to give the impression of being the product of an extravagant imagination, in the fact that a young couple who had only been married a few years should have ended a siesta on a hot summer's afternoon with a love-scene, and should have disregarded the presence of their little boy of one and a half, asleep in his cot. On the contrary, such an event would, I think, be something entirely commonplace and banal; and even the position in which we have inferred that the coitus took place cannot in the least alter this judgement—especially as the evidence does not require that the intercourse should have been performed from behind each time. A single time would have been enough to give the spectator an opportunity for making observations which would have been rendered difficult or impossible by any other attitude of the lovers. The content of the scene cannot therefore in itself be discussed later.

Later on I shall carefully examine these and other doubts; but I can assure the reader that I am no less critically inclined deferred, but became possible at the time of the dream owing to his development, his sexual excitation, and his sexual researches.

1 The first of these difficulties cannot be reduced by assuming that the child at the time of his observation was at all probably a year older, that is to say two and a half, an age at which he may have been perfectly capable of talking. All the minor details of my patient's case almost excluded the possibility of shifting the date in this way. Moreover, the fact should be taken into account that these scenes of observing parental intercourse are by no means rarely brought to light in analysis. The condition of their occurrence, however, is precisely that it should be in the earliest period of childhood. The older the child is, the more carefully, with parents above a certain social level, will the child be deprived of the opportunity for this kind of observation.

**Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose**

... störte er den Verkehr der Eltern auf eine Weise, von der späterhin die Rede sein wird [S. 195].


Ich werde diese und andere Bedenken später sorgfältig prüfen, versichere dem Leser, daß ich nicht weniger kritisch als er gegen die Annahme einer

... stört...
than he towards an acceptance of this observation of the child’s, and I will only ask him to join me in adopting a provisional belief in the reality of the scene. We will first proceed with the study of the relations between this ‘primal scene’ and the patient’s dream, his symptoms, and the history of his life; and we will trace separately the effects that followed from the essential content of the scene and from one of its visual impressions.

By the latter I mean the postures which he saw his parents adopt—the man upright, and the woman bent down like an animal. We have already heard [p. 30] that during his anxiety period his sister used to terrify him with a picture from the fairy-book, in which the wolf was shown standing upright, with one foot forward, with its claws stretched out and its ears pricked. He devoted himself with tireless perseverance during the treatment to the task of hunting in the second-hand bookshops till he had found the illustrated fairy-book of his childhood, and had recognized his bogy in an illustration to the story of ‘The Wolf and the Seven Little Goats’. He thought that the posture of the wolf in this picture might have reminded him of that of his father during the constructed primal scene. At all events the picture became the point of departure for further manifestations of anxiety. Once when he was in his seventh or eighth year he was informed that next day a new tutor was to come. At that time he was already in the state of anxiety. The wolf phobia had been overcome by that time, so he was free to choose himself a new anxiety-animal, and in this late dream he was recognizing the tutor as a father-surrogate. In the later years of his childhood each of his tutors and masters played the part of his father, and was endowed with his father’s influence both for good and for evil.

While he was at his secondary school the Fates provided him with a remarkable opportunity of reviving his wolf phobia, and of using the relation which lay behind it as an occasion for severe inhibitions. The master who taught his form Latin was called Wolf. From the very first he felt cowed by him, and he was once taken severely to task by him for having made a stupid mistake

1 ['Urszene.' This seems to be the earliest published use of the term. Freud had, however, used it in approximately the same sense in a letter to Fliess as early as May 2, 1897 (1950a, Letter 61).]

Das Schicksal schenkte ihm einen sonderbaren Anlaß, seine Wolfsphobie in der Gymnasialzeit aufzufrischen und die Relation, die ihr zugrunde lag, zum Ausgang schwerer Hemmungen zu machen. Der Lehrer, der den lateinischen Unterricht seiner Klasse leitete, hieß Wolf. Er war von Anfang an vor ihm eingeschüchtert, zog sich einmal eine schwere Beschimpfung von ihm zu, weil er in einer lateinischen Übersetzung einen
in a piece of Latin translation. From that time on he could not get free from a paralysing fear of this master, and it was soon extended to other masters besides. But the occasion on which he made his blunder in the translation was also to the purpose. He had to translate the Latin word 'filius', and he did it with the French word 'fils' instead of with the corresponding word from his own language. The wolf, in fact, was still his father.

The first 'transitory symptom' which the patient produced during the treatment went back once more to the wolf phobia and to the fairy tale of 'The Seven Little Goats'. In the room in which the first sessions were held there was a large grandfather clock opposite the patient, who lay on a sofa facing away from me. I was struck by the fact that from time to time he turned his head towards me, looked at me in a very friendly way as though to propitiate me, and then turned his look away from me to the clock. I thought at the time that he was in this way showing his eagerness for the end of the hour. A long time afterwards the patient reminded me of this piece of dumb show, and gave me an explanation of it; for he recalled that the youngest of the seven little goats hid himself in the case of the grandfather clock while his six brothers were eaten up by the wolf. So what he had meant was: 'Be kind to me! Must I be frightened of you? Are you going to eat me up? Shall I hide myself from you in the clock-case like the youngest little goat?'

The wolf that he was afraid of was undoubtedly his father; but his fear of the wolf was conditional upon the creature being in an upright posture. His recollection asserted most definitely that he had not been terrified by pictures of wolves going on all fours or, as in the story of 'Little Red Riding-Hood', lying in

1 After this reprimand from the schoolmaster-wolf he learnt that it was the general opinion of his companions that, to be pacified, the master expected money from him. We shall return to this point later [p. 72 ff].—I can see that it would greatly facilitate a rationalistic view of such a history of a child's development as this if it could be supposed that his whole fear of the wolf had really originated from the Latin master of that name, that it had been projected back into his childhood, and, supported by the illustration to the fairy tale, had caused the phantasy of the primal scene. But this is untenable; the chronological priority of the wolf phobia and its reference to the period of his childhood spent upon the first estate is far too securely attested. And his dream at the age of four?

8 Ferenczi (1912).
bed. The posture which, according to our construction of the primal scene, he had seen the woman assume, was of no less significance; though in this case the significance was limited to the sexual sphere. The most striking phenomenon of his erotic life after maturity was his liability to compulsive attacks of falling physically in love which came on and disappeared again in the most puzzling succession. These attacks released a tremendous energy in him even at times when he was otherwise inhibited, and they were quite beyond his control. I must, for a specially important reason, postpone a full consideration of this in inhibited, and they were quite beyond his control. I must, for a

mendous energy in him even at. times when he was otherwise

compulsive love [seep. 91

his was subject to a definite condition, which was concealed from

bed. The posture which, according to our construction of the

his puberty he had felt large and conspicuous buttocks as the most powerful attraction in a woman; to copulate except from behind gave him scarcely any enjoyment. At this point a criticism may justly be raised: it may be objected that a sexual preference of this kind for the hind parts of the body is a general characteristic of people who are inclined to an obsessional neurrosis, and that its presence does not justify us in referring it back to a special impression in childhood. It is part of the fabric of the anal-erotic disposition and is one of the archaic traits which distinguish that constitution. Indeed, copulation from behind—more ferarum [in the fashion of animals]—may, after all, be regarded as phylogenetically the older form. We shall return to this point too in a later discussion, when we have brought forward the supplementary material which showed the basis of the unconscious condition upon which his falling in love depended. [Cf. pp. 56 and 92.]

Let us now proceed with our discussion of the relations between his dream and the primal scene. We should so far have expected the dream to present the child (who was rejoicing at Christmas in the prospect of the fulfilment of his wishes) with this picture of sexual satisfaction afforded through his father's agency, just as he had seen it in the primal scene, as a model of the satisfaction that he himself was longing to obtain from his father. Instead of this picture, however, there appeared the material of the story which he had been told by his grandfather shortly before: the tree, the wolves, and the taillessness (in the

Der Traum und die Urszene


Setzen wir nun in der Erörterung der Beziehungen zwischen Traum und Urszene fort. Nach unseren bisherigen Erwartungen sollte der Traum dem Kind, das sich auf die Erfüllung seiner Wünsche zu Weihnachten freut, das Bild der Sexualbefriedigung durch den Vater vorführen, wie er es in jener Urszene gesehen hatte, als Vorbild der eigenen Befriedigung, die er vom Vater ersehnt. Anstatt dieses Bild tritt aber das Material der Geschichte auf, die der Großvater kurz vorher erzählt hatte: Der Baum, die Wölfe, die Schwanzlosigkeit in der Form der Über-
over-compensated form of the bushy tails of the putative wolves). At this point some connection is missing, some associative bridge to lead from the content of the primal scene to that of the wolf story. This connection is provided once again by the postures and only by them. In his grandfather’s story the tailless wolf asked the others to climb upon him. It was this detail that called up the recollection of the picture of the primal scene; and it was in this way that it became possible for the material of the primal scene to be represented by that of the wolf story, and at the same time for the two parents to be replaced, as was desirable, by several wolves. The content of the dream met with a further transformation, and the material of the wolf story was made to fit in with the content of the fairy tale of ‘The Seven Little Goats’, by borrowing from it the number seven.¹

The steps in the transformation of the material, ‘primal scene—wolf story—fairy tale of “The Seven Little Goats”’, are a reflection of the progress of the dreamer’s thoughts during the construction of the dream: ‘longing for sexual satisfaction from his father—realization that castration is a necessary condition of it—fear of his father’. It is only at this point, I think, that we can regard the anxiety-dream of this four-year-old boy as being exhaustively explained.²

It says ‘six or seven’ in the dream. Six is the number of the children that were eaten; the seventh escaped into the clock-case. It is always a strict law of dream-interpretation that an explanation must be found for every detail.

Now that we have succeeded in making a synthesis of the dream, I will try to give a comprehensive account of the relations between the manifest content of the dream and the latent dream-thoughts. [Cf. the synthesis of ‘Dora’s’ first dream (1905e), Standard Ed., 7, 88 ff.]

It was night, I was lying in my bed. The latter part of this is the beginning of the reproduction of the primal scene. ‘It was night’ is a distortion of ‘I had been asleep’. The remark, ‘I know it was winter when I had the dream, and night-time’, refers to the patient’s recollection of the dream and is not part of its content. It is correct, for it was one of the nights before his birthday, that is, Christmas Day.

Suddenly the window opened of its own accord. That is to be translated: ‘Suddenly I woke up of my own accord’, a recollection of the primal scene. The influence of the wolf story, in which the wolf leapt in through the window, is making itself felt as a modifying factor, and transforms a direct expression into a plastic one. At the same time the introduction of the window serves the purpose of providing a contemporary reference for the subsequent content of the dream. On Christmas Eve the door opens suddenly and one sees before one the tree with the


¹ 6 oder 7 heißt es im Traum. 6 ist die Anzahl der gefressenen Kinder, das siebente rettet sich in den Uhrkasten. Es bleibt strenge Gesetz der Traumdeutung, daß jede Einzelheit ihre Aufklärung finde.

² Nachdem uns die Synthese dieses Traumes gelungen ist, will ich versuchen, die Beziehungen des manifesten Trauminhaltes zu den latenten Traumgedanken übersichtlich darzustellen.


(IV) THE DREAM AND THE PRIMAL SCENE

After what has already been said I need only deal shortly with the pathogenic effect of the primal scene and the alteration which its revival produced in his sexual development. We will only trace that one of its effects to which the dream gave expression. Later on we shall have to make it clear that it was not only a single sexual current that started from the primal scene but a whole set of them, that his sexual life was positively presents. Here therefore the influence of the actual expectation of Christmas (which comprises the wish for sexual satisfaction) is making itself felt.

The big walnut-tree. The representative of the Christmas tree, and therefore belonging to the current situation. But also the tree out of the wolf story, on which the tailor took refuge from pursuit, and under which the wolves were on the watch. Moreover, as I have often been able to satisfy myself, a high tree is a symbol of observing, of scopophilia. A person sitting on a tree can see everything that is going on below him and cannot himself be seen. Compare Boccaccio's well-known story, and his facetia.

The wolves. Their number: six or seven. In the wolf story there was a pack, and no number was given. The fixing of the number shows the influence of the fairy tale of 'The Seven Little Goats', six of whom were eaten up. The fact that the number two in the primal scene is replaced by a larger number, which would be absurd in the primal scene, is welcomed by the resistance as a means of distortion. In the illustration to the dream the dreamer brings forward the number five, which is probably meant to correct the statement 'It was night'.

They were sitting on the tree. In the first place they replace the Christmas presents hanging on the tree. But they are also transposed on to the tree because that can mean that they are looking. In his grandfather's story they were posted underneath the tree. Their relation to the tree has therefore been reversed in the dream; and from this it may be concluded that there are further reversals of the latent material to be found in the content of the dream.

They were looking at him with strained attention. This feature comes entirely from the primal scene, and has got into the dream at the price of being turned completely round.

They were quite white. This feature is unessential in itself, but is strongly emphasized in the dreamer's narrative. It owes its intensity to a copious fusion of elements from all the strata of the material, and it combines unimportant details from the other sources of the dream with a fragment of the primal scene which is more significant. This last part of its determination goes back to the white of his parents' bedclothes and underclothes, and to this is added the white of the flocks of sheep, and of the sheep-dogs, as an allusion to his sexual researches among animals, and the white in the fairy tale of 'The Seven Little Goats', in which the mother is recognized by the white of her hand. Later on we shall see that the white clothes are also an allusion to death. [There does not


Sie sitzen auf dem Baum. Sie ersetzen zunächst die am Baum hängenden Weihnachtsgeschenke. Sie sind aber auch auf den Baum versetzt, weil das heißen kann, sie schauen. In der Geschichte des Großvaters lagen sie unten um den Baum. Ihr Verhältnis zum Baum ist also im Traum umgekehrt worden, woraus zu schließen ist, daß im Trauminhalt noch andere Umkehrungen des latenten Materials vorkommen.


splintered up by it. We shall further bear in mind that the activation of this scene (I purposely avoid the word 'recollection') had the same effect as though it were a recent experience. The effects of the scene were deferred, but meanwhile it had lost none of its freshness in the interval between the ages of one and a half and four years. We shall perhaps find in what follows reason to suppose that it produced certain effects even seem in fact to be any further clear reference to this point. The connection is perhaps with the episode of the winding-sheet (p. 98).

_They sat there motionless._ This contradicts the most striking feature of the observed scene, namely, its agitated movement, which, in virtue of the postures to which it led, constitutes the connection between the primal scene and the wolf story.

_They had tails like foxes._ This must be the contradiction of a conclusion which was derived from the action of the primal scene on the wolf story, and which must be recognized as the most important result of the dreamer's sexual researches: 'So there really is such a thing as castration.' The terror with which this conclusion was received finally broke out in the dream and brought it to an end.

_The fear of being eaten up by the wolves._ It seemed to the dreamer as though the motive force of this fear was not derived from the content of the dream. He said he need not have been afraid, for the wolves looked more like foxes or dogs, and they did not rush at him as though to bite him, but were very still and not at all terrible. We observe that the dream-work tries for some time to make the distressing content harmless by transforming it into its opposite. ("They aren't moving, and, only look, they have the loveliest tails!") Until at last this expedient fails, and the fear breaks out. It expresses itself by the help of the fairy tale, in which the goat-children are eaten up by the wolf-father. This part of the fairy tale may perhaps have acted as a reminder of threats made by the child's father in fun when he was playing with him; so that the fear of being eaten up by the wolf may be a reminiscence as well as a substitute by displacement.

The wishes which act as motive forces in this dream are obvious. First there are the superficial wishes of the day, that Christmas with its presents may already be here (a dream of impatience) and accompanying these is the deeper wish, now permanently present, for sexual satisfaction from the dreamer's father. This is immediately replaced by the wish to see once more what was then so fascinating. The mental process then proceeds on its way. Starting from the fulfilment of this last wish with the conjuring up of the primal scene, it passes on to what has now become inevitable—the repudiation of that wish and its repression.

_The diffuseness and elaboration of this commentary have been forced on me by the effort to present the reader with some sort of equivalent for the convincing power of an analysis carried through by oneself; perhaps they may also serve to discourage him from asking for the publication of analyses which have stretched over several years._

---

_Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose_


in der Tat weiter keinen deutlichen Hinweis zu diesem

Punkt zu geben. Vielleicht besteht eine Beziehung zu der Episode mit dem Totenhemd (S. 211.)

_Sie sitzen regungslos da._ Hier wird dem auffälligsten Inhalt der beobachteten Szene widersprochen; der Bewegtheit, welche durch die Stellung, zu der sie führt, die Verbindung zwischen Urszene und Wolfsgeschichte herstellt.

_Sie haben Schwänze wie Füchte._ Dies soll einem Ergebnis widersprechen, welches aus der Einwirkung der Urszene auf die Wolfsgeschichte gewonnen wurde und als der wichtigste Schluß der Sexualforschung anzuerkennen ist: Es gibt also wirklich eine Kastration. Der Schreck, mit dem die Denkenentfalls aufgenommen wird, bricht sich endlich im Traume Bahn und erzeugt dessen Schluß.

Die _Angst, von den Wöl­f­en aufgefressen zu werden._ Sie erscheinen dem Träumer als nicht durch den Trauminhalt motiviert. Er sagte, ich hätte mich nicht fürchten müssen, denn die Wölfe sahen eher aus wie Füchte oder Hunde, sie führen auch nicht auf mich los, wie um mich zu beissen, sondern waren sehr ruhig und gar nicht schrecklich. Wir erkennen, daß die Traumarbeit sich eine Weile bemüht hat, die peinlichen Inhalte durch Verwandlung ins Gegenteil unschädlich zu machen. (Sie bewegen sich nicht, sie haben ja die schönsten Schwänze.) Bis endlich dieses Mittel versagt und die Angst losbricht. Sie findet ihren Ausdruck mit Hilfe des Märchens, in dem die Geillein-Kinder vom Wolf-Vater gefressen werden. Möglicherweise hat dieser Märcheninhalt selbst an schmerzhafte Drohungen des Vaters, wenn er mit dem Kinde spielte, erinnert, so daß die Angst, vom Wolf gefressen zu werden, ebensowohl Reminiszenz wie Verschiebungs­ersatz sein könnte.

Die Wunschmotive dieses Traumes sind handgreifliche: zu den oberflächlichen Tageswünschen, Weihnachten mit seinen Geschenken möge schon da sein (Ungeduldstraum), gesellt sich der tiefere, um diese Zeit permanente Wunsch nach der Sexualbefriedigung durch den Vater, der sich zunächst durch den Wunsch, das wiederzusehen, was damals so fesselnd war, ersetzt. Dann verläuft der psychische Vorgang von der Erfüllung dieses Wunsches in der herausgeschworenen Urszene bis zu der jetzt unvermeidlich gewordenen Ablehnung des Wunsches und der Verdrängung.

Die Breite und Ausführlichkeit der Darstellung, zu der ich durch das Bemühen gezögert bin, dem Leser irgendein Äquivalent für die Beweiskraft einer selbstdurchgeführten Analyse zu bieten, mag ihn gleichzeitig davon abbringen, die Publikation von Analysen zu verlangen, die sich über mehrere Jahre erstreckt haben.
at the time of its perception, that is, from the age of one and a half onwards.

When the patient entered more deeply into the situation of the primal scene, he brought to light the following pieces of self-observation. He assumed to begin with, he said, that the event of which he was a witness was an act of violence, but the expression of enjoyment which he saw on his mother’s face did not fit in with this; he was obliged to recognize that the experience was one of gratification. What was essentially new for him in his observation of his parents’ intercourse was the conviction of the reality of castration—a possibility with which he was a witness was an expression of enjoyment which he saw on his mother’s face did not have already been occupied previously. (The sight of the two girls micturating, his Nanya’s threat, the governess’s interpretation of violence, but the

1 We might perhaps best do justice to this statement of the patient’s by supposing that the object of his observation was in the first instance a coitus in the normal position, which cannot fail to produce the impression of being a sadistic act, and that only after the event the reality of castration—a possibility with which he was a witness was an expression of enjoyment which he saw on his mother’s face did not have already been occupied previously. (The sight of the two girls micturating, his Nanya’s threat, the governess’s interpretation of violence, but the

1 Der Aussage des Patienten tragen wir vielleicht am ehesten Rechnung, wenn wir annehmen, daß der Gegenstand seiner Beobachtung zuerst ein Koitus in normaler Stellung gewesen ist, der den Eindruck eines sadistischen Aktes erwecken muß. Erst nach diesem sei die Stellung gewechselt worden, so daß er Gelegenheit zu anderen Beobachtungen und Urteilen gewann. Allein diese Annahme ist nicht gesichert worden, scheint mir auch nicht unentbehrlich. Wir wollen über die abkürzende Darstellung des Textes die wirkliche Situation nicht außer Auge lassen, daß der Analyse im Alter nach 25 Jahren Eindrücke und Regungen aus seinem vierten Jahr Worte verleihe, die er damals nicht gefunden hätte. Vernachlässigt man diese Bemerkung, so kann man es leicht komisch und unglaubwürdig finden, daß ein vierjähriges Kind solcher fachlicher Urteile und gelehrt er Gedanken fähig sein sollte. Es ist dies einfach ein zweiter Fall von Nachträglichkeit. Das Kind empfängt mit 1½ Jahren einen Eindruck, auf den es nicht genügend reagieren kann, versteht ihn erst, wird von ihm ergriffen bei der Wiederbelebung des Eindrucks mit vier Jahren, und kann erst zwei Dezennien später in der Analyse mit bewußter Denktätigkeit erfassen, was damals in ihm vorgegangen. Der Analyse setzt sich dann mit Recht über die drei Zeitphasen hinweg und setzt sein gegenwärtiges Ich in die längst vergangene Situation ein. Wir folgen ihm darin, denn bei korrekter Selbstbeobachtung und Deutung muß der Effekt so ausfallen, als ob man die Distanz zwischen der zweiten und der dritten Zeitphase vernachlässigen könnte. Auch haben wir kein anderes Mittel, die Vorgänge in der zweiten Phase zu beschreiben.

Der Traum und die Ursene zur Zeit ihrer Wahrnehmung, also von 1½ Jahren an, geübt hat.

Wen sich der Patient in die Situation der Ursene vertiefte, förderte er folgende Selbstwahrnehmungen zu Tage: Er habe vorher angenommen, der beobachtete Vorgang sei ein gewalttätiger Akt, allein dazu stimmte das vergnügte Gesicht nicht, das er die Mutter machen sah; er mußte erkennen, daß es sich um eine Befriedigung handle. Das wesentliche Neue, das ihm die Beobachtung des Verkehrs der Eltern brachte, war die Überzeugung von der Wirklichkeit der Kastration, deren Möglichkeit seine Gedanken schon vorher beschäftigt hatte. (Der Anblick der beiden urinierenden Mädchen, die Drohung der Nanja, die Deutung der
of the sugar-sticks, the recollection of his father having beaten
a snake to pieces.) For now he saw with his own eyes the
wound of which his Nanya had spoken, and understood that its
presence was a necessary condition of intercourse with his father.
He could no longer confuse it with the bottom, as he had in his
observation of the little girls.\(^1\)

The dream ended in a state of anxiety, from which he did not
recover until he had his Nanya with him. He fled, therefore,
from his father to her. His anxiety was a repudiation of the wish
for sexual satisfaction from his father—the trend which had put
the dream into his head. The form taken by the anxiety, the
fear of "being eaten by the wolf", was only the (as we shall hear,
regressive) transposition of the wish to be copulated with by his
father, that is, to be given sexual satisfaction in the same way as
his mother. His last sexual aim, the passive attitude towards his
father, succumbed to repression, and fear of his father appeared
in its place in the shape of the wolf phobia.

And the driving force of this repression? The circumstances
of the case show that it can only have been his narcissistic genital
libido, which, in the form of concern for his male organ, was
fighting against a satisfaction whose attainment seemed to
involves the renunciation of that organ. And it was from his
threatened narcissism that he derived the masculinity with
which he defended himself against his passive attitude towards
his father.

We now observe that at this point in our narrative we must
make an alteration in our terminology. During the dream he
had reached a new phase in his sexual organization. Up to then
the sexual opposites had been for him active and passive. Since
his seduction his sexual aim had been a passive one, of being
touched on the genitals; it was then transformed, by regression
to the earlier stage of the sadistic-anal organization, into the
masochistic aim of being beaten or punished. It was a matter of
indifference to him whether he reached this aim with a man or
with a woman. He had travelled, without considering the differ-
ence of sex, from his Nanya to his father; he had longed to have
his penis touched by his Nanya, and had tried to provoke a
beating from his father. Here his genitals were left out of
account; though the connection with them which had been

\(^1\) We shall learn later on [p. 77 ff.], when we come to trace out his
anal erotism, how he further dealt with this portion of the problem.

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose

Gouvernante von den Zuckerstangen, die Erinnerung, daß der Vater
eine Schlange in Stücke geschlagen.) Denn jetzt sah er mit eigenen Augen
die Wunde, von der die Nanja gesprochen hatte, und verstand, daß ihr
Vorhandensein eine Bedingung des Verkehrs mit dem Vater war. Er
konnte sie nicht mehr wie bei der Beobachtung der kleinen Mädchen mit
dem Popo verwedeln.\(^1\)

Der Ausgang des Traumes war Angst, von der er sich nicht eher be-
rührte, als bis er seine Nanja bei sich hatte. Er flüchtete sich also zu ihr
vom Vater weg. Die Angst war eine Ablehnung des Wunsches nach
Sexualbefriedigung durch den Vater, welches Streben ihm den Traum
eingegeben hatte. Ihr Ausdruck: vom Wolf gefressen zu werden, war
nur eine—wie wir hören werden: regressive—Umsetzung des Wunsches,
vom Vater koliiert, d. h. so befriedigt zu werden wie die Mutter. Sein
letztes Sexualziel, die passive Einstellung zum Vater, war einer Ver-
drängung erlegen, die Angst vor dem Vater in Gestalt der Wolfsphobie
an ihre Stelle getreten.

Und die treibende Kraft dieser Verdrängung? Dem ganzen Sachverhalt
konnte es nur die narzisstische Genitallibido sein, die sich als Sorge
um sein männliches Glied gegen eine Befriedigung sträubte, für die der
Verzicht auf dieses Glied Bedingung schien. Aus dem bedrohten Narzis-
mus schöpfte er die Männlichkeit, mit der er sich gegen die passive Einst-
stellung zum Vater wehrte.

Wir werden jetzt darauf aufmerksam, daß wir an diesem Punkte der
Darstellung unsere Terminologie ändern müssen. Er hatte während des
Traumes eine neue Phase seiner Sexualorganisation erreicht. Die sexuellen
Gegensätze waren ihm bisher aktiv und passiv gewesen. Sein Sexual-
zweck war seit der Verführung ein passives, am Genitale berührtes zu
werden, dann wandelte es sich durch Regression auf die frühere Stufe
der sadistisch-analen Organisation in das masochistische, gezüchtigt,
gestauf zu werden. Es war ihm gleichgültig, ob er dieses Ziel beim Mann
oder Weib erreichen sollte. Er war ohne Rücksicht auf den Geschlechts-
unterschied von der Nanja zum Vater gewandert, hatte von der Nanja
verlangt, am Glied berührt zu werden, vom Vater die Züchtigung pro-
vocieren wollen. Das Genitale kam dabei außer Betracht; in der Pha-

\(^1\) Wie er sich mit diesem Anteil des Problems weiter auseinandersetzt, werden wir
später [S. 192 ff.] bei der Verfolgung seiner Analerotik erfahren.
concealed by the regression was still expressed in his phantasy of being beaten on the penis. The activation of the primal scene in the dream now brought him back to the genital organization. He discovered the vagina and the biological significance of masculine and feminine. He understood now that active was the same as masculine, while passive was the same as feminine. His passive sexual aim should now have been transformed into a feminine one, and have expressed itself as "being copulated with by his father" instead of "being beaten by him on the genitals or on the bottom". This feminine aim, however, underwent repression and was obliged to let itself be replaced by fear of the wolf.

We must here break off the discussion of his sexual development until new light is thrown from the later stages of his history upon these earlier ones. For the proper appreciation of the wolf phobia we will only add that both his father and mother became wolves. His mother took the part of the castrated wolf, which let the others climb upon it; his father took the part of the wolf that climbed. But his fear, as we have heard him assure us, related only to the standing wolf, that is, to his father. It must further strike us that the fear with which the dream ended was supposed, related only to the standing wolf.

As it was reminded of the fact of its castration, which let the others climb upon it, was seized with fear as soon as it was reminded of the fact of its taillessness. It seems, therefore, as though he had identified himself with his castrated mother during the dream, and was now fighting against that fact. 'If you want to be sexually satisfied by Father', we may perhaps represent him as saying to himself, 'you must allow yourself to be castrated like Mother; but I won't have that.' In short, a clear protest on the part of his masculinity! Let us, however, plainly understand that the sexual development of the case that we are now examining has a great disadvantage from the point of view of research, for it was by no means undisturbed. It was first decisively influenced by the seduction, and was then diverted by the scene of observation of the coitus, which in its deferred action operated like a second seduction.1

---

1 [An attempt was later made by Rank (1926) to make use of the wolf dream to support his own views on the analysis of the transference. His arguments were criticized by Ferenczi (1927), who quoted the text of a letter from the 'Wolf Man' himself which had been put at his disposal by Freud.]
A FEW DISCUSSIONS

The whale and the polar bear, it has been said, cannot wage war on each other, for since each is confined to his own element they cannot meet. It is just as impossible for me to argue with workers in the field of psychology or of the neuroses who do not recognize the postulates of psycho-analysis and who look on its results as artefacts. But during the last few years there has grown up another kind of opposition as well, among people who, in their own opinion at all events, take their stand upon the ground of analysis, who do not dispute its technique or results, but who merely think themselves justified in drawing other conclusions from the same material and in submitting it to other interpretations.

As a rule, however, theoretical controversy is unfruitful. No sooner has one begun to depart from the material on which one ought to be relying, than one runs the risk of becoming intoxicated with one's own assertions and, in the end, of supporting opinions which any observation would have contradicted. For this reason it seems to me to be incomparably more useful to combat dissentient interpretations by testing them upon particular cases and problems.

I have remarked above (see p. 38) that it will certainly be considered improbable, firstly, that 'a child at the tender age of one and a half could be in a position to take in the perceptions of such a complicated process and to preserve them so accurately in his unconscious; secondly, that it is possible at the age of four for a deferred revision of this material to penetrate the understanding; and finally, that any procedure could succeed in bringing into consciousness coherently and convincingly the details of a scene of this kind which had been experienced and understood in such circumstances'.

The last question is purely one of fact. Anyone who will take the trouble of pursuing an analysis into these depths by means of the prescribed technique will convince himself that it is decidedly possible. Anyone who neglects this, and breaks off the analysis in some higher stratum, has waived his right of

EINIGE DISKUSSIONEN


Theoretischer Widerspruch ist aber zumeist unfruchtbar. Sowie man begonnen hat, sich von dem Material, aus dem man schöpfen soll, zu entfernen, läuft man Gefahr, sich an seinen Behauptungen zu berauschen und endlich Meinungen zu vertreten, denen jede Beobachtung widersprochen hätte. Es scheint mir darum ungleich zweckmäßiger, abweichende Auffassungen dadurch zu bekämpfen, daß man sie an einzelnen Fällen und Problemen erprobt.

Ich habe oben (S. 157 f.) ausgeführt, es werde gewiß für unwahrscheinlich gehalten werden, daß ein Kind in dem zarten Alter von 1½ Jahren imstande sein sollte, die Wahrnehmungen eines so komplizierten Vorganges in sich aufzunehmen und sie so getreu in seinem Unbewußten zu bewahren, zweitens, daß eine nachträglich zum Verständnis vor­dringende Bearbeitung dieses Materials zu vier Jahren möglich ist, und endlich, daß es durch irgendein Verfahren gelingen sollte, die Einzel­heiten einer solchen Szene, unter solchen Umständen erlebt und ver­standen, in zusammenhängender und überzeugender Weise bewußt zu machen.

Die letzte Frage ist eine rein faktische. Wer sich die Mühe nimmt, die Analyse mittels der vorgezeichneten Technik in solche Tiefen zu treiben, wird sich überzeugen, daß es sehr wohl möglich ist; wer es unterläßt und in irgendeiner höheren Schicht die Analyse unterbricht, hat sich des
forming a judgement on the matter. But the interpretation of what is arrived at in depth-analysis is not decided by this.

The two other doubts are based on a low estimate of the importance of early infantile impressions and an unwillingness to ascribe such enduring effects to them. The supporters of this view look for the causes of neuroses almost exclusively in the grave conflicts of later life; they assume that the importance of attributing such enduring effects to them. The supporters of this view put forward for discussion is as follows. It maintains that scenes from early infancy, such as are brought up by an exhaustive analysis of neuroses (as, for instance, in the present case), are not reproductions of real occurrences, to which it is possible to ascribe an influence over the course of the patient's later life and over the formation of his symptoms. It considers them rather as products of the imagination, which find their instigation in mature life, which are intended to serve as some kind of symbolic representation of real wishes and interests, and which owe their origin to a regressive tendency, to a turning-away from the tasks of the present. If that is so, we can of course spare ourselves the necessity of attributing such a surprising amount to the mental life and intellectual capacity of children of the tenderest age.

Besides the desire which we all share for the rationalization and simplification of our difficult problem, there are all sorts of facts that speak in favour of this view. It is also possible to eliminate beforehand one objection to it which may arise, particularly in the mind of a practising analyst. It must be admitted that, if this view of these scenes from infancy were the right one, the carrying-out of analysis would not in the first instance be altered in any respect. If neurotics are endowed with the evil characteristic of diverting their interest from the present and of attaching it to these regressive substitutes, the products of their imagination, then there is absolutely nothing...
for it but to follow upon their tracks and bring these unconscious productions into consciousness; for, leaving on one side their lack of value from the point of view of reality, they are of the utmost value from our point of view, since they are for the moment the bearers and possessors of the interest which we want to set free so as to be able to direct it on to the tasks of the present. The analysis would have to run precisely the same course as one which had a naif faith in the truth of the phantasies. 'The difference would only come at the end of the analysis, after the phantasies had been laid bare. We should then say to the patient: 'Very well, then; your neurosis proceeded as though you had received these impressions and spun them out in your childhood. You will see, of course, that that is out of the question. They were products of your imagination which were intended to divert you from the real tasks that lay before you. Let us now enquire what these tasks were, and what lines of communication ran between them and your phantasies.' After the infantile phantasies had been disposed of in this way, it would be possible to begin a second portion of the treatment, which would be concerned with the patient's real life.

Any shortening of this course, any alteration, that is, in psycho-analytic treatment, as it has hitherto been practised, would be technically inadmissible. Unless these phantasies are made conscious to the patient to their fullest extent, he cannot obtain command of the interest which is attached to them. If his attention is diverted from them as soon as their existence and their general outlines are divined, support is simply being given to the work of repression, thanks to which they have been put beyond the patient's reach in spite of all his pains. If he is given a premature sense of their unimportance, by being informed, for instance, that it will only be a question of phantasies, which, of course, have no real significance, his co-operation will never be secured for the task of bringing them into consciousness. A correct procedure, therefore, would make no alteration in the technique of analysis, whatever estimate might be formed of these scenes from infancy.

I have already mentioned that there are a number of facts which can be brought up in support of the view of these scenes being regressive phantasies. And above all there is this one: so far as my experience hitherto goes, these scenes from infancy are not reproduced during the treatment as recollections, they

---


Eine Abkürzung dieses Weges, also eine Abänderung der bisher geübten psychoanalytischen Kur, wäre technisch unzulässig. Wenn man dem Kranken diese Phantasien nicht in ihrem vollen Umfange bewußt macht, kann man ihm die Verfügung über das an sie gebundene Interesse nicht geben. Wenn man ihn von ihnen ablenkt, sobald man ihre Existenz und allgemeine Umriss ahnt, unterstützt man nur das Werk der Verdrängung, durch das sie für alle Bemühungen des Kranken unantastbar geworden sind. Wenn man sie ihm frühzeitig entwertet, etwa indem man ihm eröffnet, es werde sich nur um Phantasien handeln, die ja keine reale Bedeutung haben, wird man nie seine Mitwirkung bereit finden, um sie dem Bewußtsein zuzuführen. Die analytische Technik dürfte also bei korrektem Vorgehen keine Änderung erfahren, wie immer man diese Infantilszenen einschätzt.

Ich habe erwähnt, daß die Auffassung dieser Szenen als regressive Phantasien manche tatsächlichen Momente zu ihrer Unterstützung anrufen kann. Vor allem das eine: Diese Infantilszenen werden in der Kur – soweit meine Erfahrung bis jetzt reicht – nicht als Erinnerungen
are the products of construction. Many people will certainly think that this single admission decides the whole dispute.

I am anxious not to be misunderstood. Every analyst knows—and he has met with the experience on countless occasions—that in the course of a successful treatment the patient brings up a large number of spontaneous recollections from his childhood, for the appearance of which (a first appearance, perhaps) the physician feels himself entirely blameless, since he has not made any attempt at a construction which could have put any material of the sort into the patient’s head. It does not necessarily follow that these previously unconscious recollections are always true. They may be; but they are often distorted from the truth, and interspersed with imaginary elements, just like the so-called screen memories which are preserved spontaneously. All that I mean to say is this: scenes, like this one in my present patient's case, which date from such an early period and exhibit a similar content, and which further lay claim to such an extraordinary significance for the history of the case, are as a rule not reproduced as recollections, but have to be divined—constructed—gradually and laboriously from an aggregate of indications. Moreover, it would be sufficient for the purposes of the argument if my admission that scenes of this kind do not necessarily become conscious in the shape of recollections applied only to cases of obsessional neurosis, or even if I were to limit my assertion to the case which we are studying here.

I am not of opinion, however, that such scenes must necessarily be phantasies because they do not reappear in the shape of recollections. It seems to me absolutely equivalent to a recollection, if the memories are replaced (as in the present case) by dreams the analysis of which invariably leads back to the same scene and which reproduce every portion of its content in an inexhaustible variety of new shapes. Indeed, dreaming is another kind of remembering, though one that conditions that rule at night and to the laws of dream-formation. It is this recurrence in dreams that I regard as the explanation of the fact that the patients themselves gradually acquire a profound conviction of the reality of these primal scenes, a conviction which is in no respect inferior to one based on recollection.  


1 [Cf. Freud’s paper on ‘Constructions in Analysis’ (1937d).]

A passage in the first edition of my *Interpretation of Dreams* (1900a) will show at what an early stage I was occupied with this problem. On reproducire, sie sind Ergebnisse der Konstruktion. Gewiß wird manchem der Streit schon durch dieses eine Zugeständnis entschieden scheinen.


1 Wie frühzeitig ich mich mit diesem Problem beschäftigt habe, mag eine Stelle aus der ersten Auflage meiner *Traumdeutung* (1900a) beweisen. Dort heißt es S. 126 (Kap. V.
There is naturally no need for those who take the opposite view to abandon as hopeless their fight against such arguments. It is well known that dreams can be guided. And the sense of conviction felt by the person analysed may be the result of suggestion, which is always having new parts assigned to it in the play of forces involved in analytic treatment. The old-fashioned psychotherapist, it might be maintained, used to suggest to his patient that he was cured, that he had overcome his inhibitions, and so on; while the psycho-analyst, on this view, suggests to him that when he was a child he had some experience or other, which he must now recollect in order to be cured. This would be the difference between the two.

Let it be clearly understood that this last attempt at an explanation on the part of those who take the view opposed to mine results in the scenes from infancy being disposed of far more fundamentally than was announced to begin with. What was argued at first was that they were not realities but phantasies. But what is argued now is evidently that they are phantasies not of the patient but of the analyst himself, who forces them upon the person under analysis on account of some complexities of his own. An analyst, indeed, who hears this reproach, will comfort himself by recalling how gradually the construction of this phantasy which he is supposed to have originated came about, and, when all is said and done, how independently of the physician's incentive many points in its development proceeded; how, after a certain phase of the treatment, everything seemed to converge upon it, and how later, in the synthesis, the most various and remarkable results radiated out from it; how not only the large problems but the smallest peculiarities in the history of the case were cleared up by this single assumption. And he will disclaim the possession of the amount of ingenuity necessary for the concoction of an occurrence which can fulfil all these demands. But even this plea will be without an effect

p. 126 [Standard Ed., 4, 184] of that work there is an analysis of a remark occurring in a dream: 'That's not obtainable any longer.' It is explained that the phrase originated from myself. 'A few days earlier I had explained to the patient that the earliest experiences of childhood were "not obtainable any longer" as such' but were replaced in analysis by "transferences" and dreams.'

1 The mechanism of dreaming cannot be influenced; but dream material is to some extent subject to orders. [See Section VII of 'Remarks on the Theory and Practice of Dream-Interpretation' (1923c).]

Die Gegner brauchen freilich den Kampf gegen diese Argumente nicht als aussichtslos aufzugeben. Träume sind bekanntlich lenkbar. Und die Überzeugung des Analysierten kann ein Erfolg der Suggestion sein, für die immer noch eine Rolle im Kräftepiel der analytischen Behandlung gesucht wird. Der Psychotherapeut alten Schlages würde seinem Patienten suggerieren, daß er gesund ist, seine Hemmungen überwunden hat u. dgl.; der Psychoanalytiker aber, daß er als Kind dies oder jenes Erlebnis gehabt hat, das er jetzt erinnern müsse, um gesund zu werden. Das wäre der Unterschied zwischen beiden.


2 Der Mechanismus des Traumes kann nicht beeinflußt werden, aber das Traummaterial läßt sich partiell kommandieren.
on an adversary who has not experienced the analysis himself. On the one side there will be a charge of subtle self-deception, and on the other of obtuseness of judgement; it will be impossible to arrive at a decision.

Let us turn to another factor which supports this opposing view of these constructed scenes from infancy. It is as follows: There can be no doubt of the real existence of all the processes which have been brought forward in order to explain these doubtful structures as phantasies, and their importance must be recognized. The diversion of interest from the tasks of real life,¹ the existence of phantasies in the capacity of substitutes for unperformed actions, the regressive tendency which is expressed in these productions—regressive in more than one sense, in so far as there is involved simultaneously a shrinking-back from life and a harking-back to the past—all these things hold true, and are regularly confirmed by analysis. One might think that they would also suffice to explain the supposed reminiscences from early infancy which are under discussion; and in accordance with the principle of economy in science ² such an explanation would have the advantage over one which is inadequate without the support of new and surprising assumptions.

I may here venture to point out that the antagonistic views which are to be found in the psycho-analytic literature of to-day are usually arrived at on the principle of pars pro toto. From a highly composite combination one part of the operative factors is singled out and proclaimed as the truth; and in its favour the other part, together with the whole combination, is then contradicted. If we look a little closer, to see which group of factors it is that has been given the preference, we shall find that it is the one that contains material already known from other sources or what can be most easily related to that material. Thus, Jung picks out actuality and regression, and Adler, egoistic motives. What is left over, however, and rejected as false, is precisely what is new in psycho-analysis and peculiar to it. This is the easiest method of repelling the revolutionary and inconvenient advances of psycho-analysis.

¹ I have good reasons for preferring to say 'the diversion of libido from current conflicts'. [For Freud's view of the relation between libido and interest, see the end of Section I of his paper on narcissism (1914c).]
² [Commonly known as 'Occam's razor'.]

Einige Diskussionen


Wenden wir uns zu einem anderen Moment, welches die gegnerische Auffassung der konstruierten Infantilszenen unterstützt. Es ist folgendes: Alle die Prozesse, welche zur Aufklärung dieser fraglichen Bildungen als Phantasien herangezogen worden sind, bestehen wirklich und sind als bedeutungsvoll anzuerkennen. Die Abwendung des Interesses von den Aufgaben des realen Lebens¹, die Existenz von Phantasien als Ersatzbildungen für die unterlassenen Aktionen, die regressive Tendenz, die sich in diesen Schöpfungen ausspricht — regissiv in mehr als einem Sinne, insofern gleichzeitig ein Zurückweichen vor dem Leben und ein Zurückgreifen auf die Vergangenheit eintritt —, all das trifft zu und läßt sich regelmäßig durch die Analyse bestätigen. Man sollte meinen, es würde auch hinreichen, die in Rede stehenden angeblichen frühkindlichen Reminiszenzen aufzuklären, und diese Erklärung hätte nach den ökonomischen Prinzipien der Wissenschaft das Vorrecht vor einer anderen, die ohne neue und befremdliche Annahmen nicht ausreichen kann.

Ich gestatte mir, an dieser Stelle darauf aufmerksam zu machen, daß die Widersprüche in der heutigen psychoanalytischen Literatur gewöhnlich nach dem Prinzip des pars pro toto angefertigt werden. Man greift aus einem hoch zusammengesetzten Ensemble einen Anteil der wirksamen Faktoren heraus, proklamiert diesen als die Wahrheit und widerspricht nun zu dessen Gunsten dem anderen Anteil und dem Ganzen. Sieht man etwa näher zu, welcher Gruppe dieser Vorzug zugefallen ist, so findet man, es ist die, welche das bereits anderswoher Bekannte enthält oder sich am ehesten ihm anschließt. So bei Jung die Aktualität und die Regression, bei Adler die egoistischen Motive. Zurückgelassen, als Irrtum verworfen, wird aber gerade das, was an der Psychoanalyse neu ist und ihr eigentümlich zukommt. Auf diesem Wege lassen sich die revolutionären Vorstöße der unbequemen Psychoanalyse am leichtesten zurückweisen.

¹ Ich ziehe aus guten Gründen vor zu sagen: Die Abwendung der Libido von den aktuellen Konflikten.
It is worth while remarking that none of the factors which are adduced by the opposing view in order to explain these scenes from infancy had to wait for recognition until Jung brought them forward as novelties. The notion of a current conflict, of a turning away from reality, of a substitutive satisfaction obtained in phantasy, of a regression to material from the past—all of this (employed, moreover, in the same context, though perhaps with a slightly different terminology) had for years formed an integral part of my own theory. It was not the whole of it, however. It was only one part of the causes leading to the formation of neuroses—that part which, starting from reality, operates in a regressive direction. Side by side with this I left room for another influence which, starting from the impressions of childhood, operates in a forward direction, which points a path for the libido that is shrinking away from life, and which makes it possible to understand the otherwise inexplicable regression to childhood. Thus on my view the two factors co-operate in the formation of symptoms. But an earlier co-operation seems to me to be of equal importance. I am of opinion that the influence of childhood makes itself felt already in the situation at the beginning of the formation of a neurosis, since it plays a decisive part in determining whether and at what point the individual shall fail to master the real problems of life.

What is in dispute, therefore, is the significance of the infantile factor. The problem is to find a case which can establish that significance beyond any doubt. Such, however, is the case which is being dealt with so exhaustively in these pages and which is distinguished by the characteristic that the neurosis in later life was preceded by a neurosis in early childhood. It is for that very reason, indeed, that I have chosen it to report upon. Should any one feel inclined to reject it because the animal phobia strikes him as not sufficiently serious to be recognized as an independent neurosis, I may mention that the phobia was succeeded without any interval by an obsessional ceremonial, and by obsessional acts and thoughts, which will be discussed in the following sections of this paper.

The occurrence of a neurotic disorder in the fourth and fifth years of childhood proves, first and foremost, that infantile experiences are by themselves in a position to produce a neurosis, without there being any need for the addition of a flight from some task which has to be faced in real life. It may be objected

Es ist nicht überflüssig hervorzuheben, daß keines der Momente, welches die gegnerische Auffassung zum Verständnis der Kindheitsszenen heranzieht, von Jung als Neuartigkeit gelehrt zu werden brauchte. Der aktuelle Konflikt, die Abwendung von der Realität, die Ersatzbefriedigung in der Phantasie, die Regression auf Material der Vergangenheit, dies alles hat, und zwar in der nämlichen Zusammenfügung, vielleicht mit geringer Abänderung der Terminologie, von jeher einen integrierenden Bestandteil meiner eigenen Lehre gebildet. Es war nicht das Ganze derselben, nur der Anteil der Verursachung, der von der Realität her zur Neurosenbildung in regressiver Richtung einwirkt. Ich habe daneben noch Raum gelassen für einen zweiten progredienten Einfluß, der von den Kindheitseindrücken her wirkt, der vom Leben zurückweichenden Libido den Weg weist und die sonst unerklärliche Regression auf die Kindheit versteht läßt. So wirken die beiden Momente nach meiner Auffassung bei der Symptombildung zusammen, aber ein früheres Zusammenwirken scheint mir ebenso bedeutungsvoll. Ich behaupte, daß der Kindheitsëinfluß sich bereits in der Anfangssituation der Neurosenbildung fühlbar macht, indem er in entscheidender Weise mitbestimmt, ob und an welcher Stelle das Individuum in die Bewältigung der realen Probleme des Lebens versagt.

Im Streit steht also die Bedeutung des infantilen Moments. Die Aufgabe geht dahin, einen Fall zu finden, der diese Bedeutung, jedem Zweifel entzogen, erweisen kann. Ein solcher ist aber der Krankheitsfall, den wir hier so ausführlich behandeln, den durch den Charakter ausgezeichnet ist, daß der Neurose im späteren Leben eine Neurose in frühen Jahren der Kindheit vorhergeht. Gerade darum habe ich ja diesen Fall zur Mitteilung gewählt. Sollte jemand ihn etwa darum ablehnen wollen, weil ihm die Tierphobie nicht wichtig genug erscheint, um als selbständige Neurose anerkannt zu werden, so will ich ihn darauf verweisen, daß ohne Intervall an diese Phobie ein Zwangszeremoniell, Zwangshandlungen und Gedanken anschließen, von denen in den folgenden Abschnitten dieser Schrift die Rede sein wird.

Eine neurotische Erkrankung im vierten oder fünften Jahr der Kindheit beweist vor allem, daß die infantilen Erlebnisse für sich allein imstande sind, eine Neurose zu produzieren, ohne daß es dazu der Flucht vor einer im Leben gestellten Aufgabe bedürfte. Man wird einwenden, daß
that even a child is constantly being confronted with tasks which it would perhaps be glad to evade. That is so; but the life of a child under school age is easily observable, and we can examine it to see whether any ‘tasks’ are to be found in it capable of determining the causation of a neurosis. But we discover nothing but instinctual impulses which the child cannot satisfy and which it is not old enough to master, and the sources from which these impulses arise. As was to be expected, the enormous shortening of the interval between the outbreak of the neurosis and the date of the childhood experiences which are under discussion reduces to the narrowest limits the regressive part of the causation, while it brings into full view the portion of it which operates in a forward direction, the influence of earlier impressions. The present case history will, I hope, give a clear picture of this position of things. But there are other reasons why neuroses of childhood give a decisive answer to the question of the nature of primal scenes—the earliest experiences of childhood that are brought to light in analysis. Let us assume as an uncontradicted premise that a primal scene of this kind has been correctly educed technically, that it is indispensable to a comprehensive solution of all the conundrums that are set us by the symptoms of the infantile disorder, that all the consequences radiate out from it, just as all the threads of the analysis have led up to it. Then, in view of its content, it is impossible that it can be anything else than the reproduction of a reality experienced by the child. For a child, like an adult, can produce phantasies only from material which has been acquired from some source or other; and with children, some of the means of acquiring it (by reading, for instance) are cut off, while the space of time at their disposal for acquiring it is short and can easily be searched with a view to the discovery of any such sources. In the present case the content of the primal scene is a picture of sexual intercourse between the boy’s parents in a posture especially favourable for certain observations. Now it would be no evidence whatever of the reality of such a scene if we were to find it in a patient whose symptoms (the effects of the scene, that is) had appeared at some time or other in the later part of his life. A person such as this might have acquired the impressions, the ideas, and the knowledge on a great number of
different occasions in the course of the long interval; he might then have transformed them into an imaginary picture, have projected them back into his childhood, and have attached them to his parents. If, however, the effects of a scene of this sort appear in the child's fourth or fifth year, then he must have witnessed the scene at an age even earlier than that. But in that case we are still faced with all the disconcerting consequences which have arisen from the analysis of this infantile neurosis. The only way out would be to assume that the patient not only unconsciously imagined the primal scene, but also concocted the alteration in his character, his fear of the wolf, and his religious obsession; but such an expedient would be contradicted by his otherwise sober nature and by the direct tradition in his family. It must therefore be left at this (I can see no other possibility): either the analysis based on the neurosis in his childhood is all a piece of nonsense from start to finish, or everything took place just as I have described it above.

At an earlier stage in the discussion [p. 41] we were brought up against an ambiguity in regard to the patient's predilection for female nates and for sexual intercourse in the posture in which they are especially prominent. It seemed necessary to trace this predilection back to the intercourse which he had observed between his parents, while at the same time a preference of this kind is a general characteristic of archaic constitutions which are predisposed to an obsessional neurosis. But the contradiction is easily resolved if we regard it as a case of overdetermination. The person who was the subject of his observation of this posture during intercourse was, after all, his father in the flesh, and it may also have been from him that he had inherited this constitutional predilection. Neither his father's subsequent illness nor his family history contradicts this; as has been mentioned already [p. 21 f.], a brother of his father's died in a condition which must be regarded as the outcome of a severe obsessional disorder.

In this connection we may recall that, at the time of his seduction as a boy of three and a quarter,1 his sister had uttered a remarkable calumny against his good old nurse, to the effect that she stood all kinds of people on their heads and then took hold of them by their genitals (p. 20). We cannot fail to be struck by the idea that perhaps the sister, at a similar tender

1 [In the editions before 1924 this read 'three and a half'.]
age, also witnessed the same scene as was observed by her brother later on, and that it was this that had suggested to her her notion about ‘standing people on their heads’ during the sexual act. This hypothesis would also give us a hint of the reason for her own sexual precocity.

In Lectures on Psycho-Analysis (1916–17, Lecture XXIII) I treated the subject on more general lines and with no controversial aim in view, it would be misleading if I omitted to apply the considerations which determined my other discussion of the matter to the case that is now before us. I therefore proceed as follows by way of supplement and rectification.—There remains the extent the conclusion that has been arrived at above and relieves lying the dream—a view, moreover, which obviates to a large extent the conclusion that has been arrived at above and relieves us of many of our difficulties. But the theory which seeks to reduce scenes from infancy to the level of regressive symbols will gain nothing even by this modification; and indeed that would be by any other analysis of an infantile neurosis.

This other view which I have in mind is that the state of affairs can be explained in the following manner. It is true that we cannot dispense with the assumption that the child observed a copulation, the sight of which gave him a conviction that castration might be more than an empty threat. Moreover, the significance which he subsequently came to attach to the postures of men and women, in connection with the development of anxiety on the one hand, and as a condition upon which his falling in love depended on the other hand, leaves us no choice but to conclude that it must have been a coitus a tergo, more ferarum. But there is another factor which is not so irreplaceable and which may be dropped. Perhaps what the child observed was not copulation between his parents but copulation between animals, which he then displaced on to his parents, as though he had inferred that his parents did things in the same way.

Colour is lent to this view above all by the fact that the wolves...
in the dream were actually sheep-dogs and, moreover, appear as such in the drawing. Shortly before the dream the boy was repeatedly taken to visit the flocks of sheep [p. 30], and there he might see just such large white dogs and probably also observe them copulating. I should also like to bring into this connection the number three, which the dreamer introduced without adding any further motive [p. 37, n. 5], and I would suggest that he had kept in his memory the fact that he had made three such observations with the sheep-dogs. What supervened during the expectant excitement of the night of his dream was the transference on to his parents of his recently acquired memory-picture, with all its details, and it was only thus that the powerful emotional effects which followed were made possible. He now arrived at a deferred understanding of the impressions which he may have received a few weeks or months earlier—a process such as all of us perhaps have been through in our own experiences. The transference from the copulating dogs on to his parents was accomplished not by means of his making an inference accompanied by words but by his searching out in his memory a real scene in which his parents had been together and which could be coalesced with the situation of the copulation. All the details of the scene which were established in the analysis of the dream may have been accurately reproduced. It was really on a summer’s afternoon while the child was suffering from malaria, the parents were both present, dressed in white, when the child woke up from his sleep, but—the scene was innocent. The rest had been added by the inquisitive child’s subsequent wish, based on his experiences with the dogs, to witness his parents too in their love-making; and the scene which was thus imagined now produced all the effects that we have catalogued, just as though it had been entirely real and not fused together out of two components, the one earlier and indifferent, the other later and profoundly impressive.

It is at once obvious how greatly the demands on our credulity are reduced. We need no longer suppose that the parents copulated in the presence of their child (a very young one, it is true)—which was a disagreeable idea for many of us. The period of time during which the effects were deferred is very greatly diminished; it now covers only a few months of the child’s fourth year and does not stretch back at all into the first dark mes ja eigentlich Schäferhunde sind und auch in der Zeichnung als solche erscheinen. Kurz vor dem Traum war der Knabe wiederholt zu den Schäferherden mitgenommen worden [S. 150], wo er solche große weiße Hunde sehen und sie wahrscheinlich auch beim Koitus beobachten konnte. Ich möchte auch die Dreizahl, die der Träumer ohne jede weitere Motivierung hinstellte [S. 157, Anm. 3], hier beziehen und annehmen, es sei ihm im Gedächtnis geblieben, daß er drei solcher Beobachtungen an den Schäferhunden gemacht. Was in der erwartungsvollen Erregtheit seiner Traumnacht hinzukam, war dann die Übertragung des kürzlich gewonnenen Erinnerungsbildes mit allen seinen Einzelheiten auf die Eltern, wodurch aber erst jene mächtigen Affektwirkungen ermöglicht wurden. Es gab jetzt ein nachträgliches Verständnis jener vielleicht vor wenigen Wochen oder Monaten empfangenen Eindrücke, ein Vorgang, wie ihn vielleicht jeder von uns an sich selbst erlebt haben mag. Die Übertragung von den koitierenden Hunden auf die Eltern vollzog sich nun nicht mittels eines an Worte gebundenen Schlußverfahrens, sondern indem eine reale Szene vom Beisammensein der Eltern in der Erinnerung aufgesucht wurde, welche sich mit der Koitussituation verschmolzen ließ. Alle in der Traumanalyse behaupteten Details der Szene mochten genau reproduziert sein. Es war wirklich an einem Sommer­nachmittag, während das Kind an Malaria litt, die Eltern waren in weißer Kleidung beide anwesend, als das Kind aus seinem Schlaf erwachte, aber – die Szene war harmlos. Das Übrige hatte der spätere Wunsch des Wißbegierigen, auch die Eltern bei ihrem Liebesverkehr zu belauschen, auf Grund seiner Erfahrungen an den Hunden hinzugefügt, und nun entfaltete die so phantasierte Szene alle die Wirkungen, die wir ihr nachgesagt haben, die nämlichen, als ob sie durchaus real gewesen und nicht aus zwei Bestandteilen, einem früheren indifferenten und einem späteren, höchst eindrucksvollen, zusammengekleistert worden wäre.

Es ist sofort ersichtlich, um wieviel das Maß der uns zugemuteten Glaubensleistung erleichtert wird. Wir brauchen nicht mehr anzunehmen, daß die Eltern den Koitus in Gegenwart des, wenn auch sehr jugendlichen, Kindes vollzogen haben, was für viele von uns eine unliebsame Vorstellung ist. Der Betrag der Nachträglichkeit wird sehr herabgesetzt; sie bezieht sich jetzt nur auf einige Monate des vierten Lebensjahres und greift überhaupt nicht in die dunklen ersten Kindheitjahre zurück. An
years of childhood. There remains scarcely anything strange in the child’s conduct in making the transference from the dogs on to his parents and in being afraid of the wolf instead of his father. He was in that phase of the development of his attitude towards the world which I have described in Totem and Taboo [1912-13, Essay IV] as the return of totemism. The theory which endeavours to explain the primal scenes found in neuroses as retrospective phantasies of a later date seems to obtain powerful support from the present observation, in spite of our patient being of the tender age of four years. Young though he was, he was yet able to succeed in replacing an impression of his fourth year by an imaginary trauma at the age of one and a half. This regression, however, seems neither mysterious nor tendentious. The scene which was to be made up had to fulfil certain conditions which, in consequence of the circumstances of the dreamer’s life, could only be found in precisely this early period; such, for instance, was the condition that he should be in bed in his parents’ bedroom.

But something that I am able to adduce from the analytic findings in other cases will seem to most readers to be the decisive factor in favour of the correctness of the view here proposed. Scenes of observing sexual intercourse between parents at a very early age (whether they be real memories or phantasies) are as a matter of fact by no means rarities in the analyses of neurotic mortals. Possibly they are no less frequent among those who are not neurotics. Possibly they are part of the regular store in the—conscious or unconscious—treasury of their memories. But as often as I have been able by means of analysis to bring out a scene of this sort, it has shown the same peculiarity which startled us with our present patient too: it has related to coitus a tergo, which alone offers the spectator a possibility of inspecting the genitals. There is surely no need any longer to doubt that what we are dealing with is only a phantasy, which is invariably aroused, perhaps, by an observation of the sexual intercourse of animals. And yet more: I have hinted [p. 38] that my description of the ‘primal scene’ has remained incomplete because I have reserved for a later moment my account of the way in which the child interrupted his parents’ intercourse. I must now add that this method of interruption is also the same in every case.

I can well believe that I have now laid myself open to grave
aspersions on the part of the readers of this case history. If these arguments in favour of such a view of the 'primal scene' were at my disposal, how could I possibly have taken it on myself to begin by advocating one which seemed so absurd? Or have I made these new observations, which have obliged me to alter my original view, in the interval between the first draft of the case history and this addition, and am I for some reason or other unwilling to admit the fact? I will admit something else instead: I intend on this occasion to close the discussion of the reality of the primal scene with a non liquet.¹ This case history is not yet at an end; in its further course a factor will emerge which will shake the certainty which we seem at present to enjoy. Nothing, I think, will then be left but to refer my readers to the passages in my Introductory Lectures in which I have treated the problem of primal phantasies or primal scenes.

¹ ['It is not clear'—a verdict where the evidence in a trial is inconclusive.]
VI

THE OBSESSIONAL NEUROSIS

Now for the third time the patient came under a new influence that gave a decisive turn to his development. When he was four and a half years old, and as his state of irritability and apprehensiveness had still not improved, his mother determined to make him acquainted with the Bible story in the hope of distracting and elevating him. Moreover, she succeeded; his initiation into religion brought the previous phase to an end, but at the same time it led to the anxiety symptoms being replaced by obsessional symptoms. Up to then he had not been able to get to sleep easily because he had been afraid of having bad dreams like the one he had had that night before Christmas; now he was obliged before he went to bed to kiss all the holy pictures in the room, to recite prayers, and to make innumerable signs of the cross upon himself and upon his bed.

His childhood now falls clearly into the following epochs:

first, the earliest period up to the seduction when he was three and a quarter years old, during which the primal scene took place; secondly, the period of the alteration in his character up to the anxiety dream (four years old); thirdly, the period of the animal phobia up to his initiation into religion (four and a half years old); and from then onwards the period of the obsessional neurosis up to a time later than his tenth year. That there should be an instantaneous and clear-cut displacement of one phase by the next was not in the nature of things or of our patient; on the contrary, the preservation of all that had gone before and the co-existence of the most different sorts of currents were characteristic of him. His naughtiness did not disappear when the anxiety set in, and persisted with slowly diminishing force during the period of piety. But there was no longer any question of a wolf phobia during this last phase. The obsessional neurosis ran its course discontinuously; the first attack was the longest and most intense, and others came on when he was eight and ten, following each time upon exciting causes which stood in a clear relationship to the content of the neurosis.

His mother told him the sacred story herself, and also...
made his Nanya read aloud to him about it out of a book adorned with illustrations. The chief emphasis in the narrative was naturally laid upon the story of the passion. His Nanya, who was very pious and superstitious, added her own commentary on it, but was also obliged to listen to all the little critic's objections and doubts. If the battles which now began to convulse his mind finally ended in a victory for faith, his Nanya's influence was not without its share in this result.

What he related to me as his recollection of his reactions to this initiation was met by me at first with complete disbelief. It was impossible, I thought, that these could have been the thoughts of a child of four and a half or five; he had probably referred back to this remote past the thoughts which had arisen from the reflections of a grown man of thirty. But the patient would not hear of this correction; I could not succeed, as in so many other differences of opinion between us, in convincing him; and in the end the correspondence between the thoughts which he had recollected and the symptoms of which he gave particulars, as well as the way in which the thoughts fitted into his sexual development, compelled me on the contrary to come to believe him. And I then reflected that this very criticism of the doctrines of religion, which I was unwilling to ascribe to the child, was only achieved by an infinitesimal minority of adults.

I shall now bring forward the material of his recollections, and not until afterwards try to find some path that may lead to an explanation of them.

The impression which he received from the sacred story was, to begin with, as he reported, by no means an agreeable one. He set his face, in the first place, against the feature of suffering in the figure of Christ, and then against his story as a whole. He turned his critical dissatisfaction against God the Father. If he

1 I also repeated attempted to throw the patient's whole story forward by one year at all events, and in that way to refer the seduction to an age of four and a quarter, the dream to his fifth birthday, etc. As regards the intervals between the events there was no possibility of gaining any time. But the patient remained obstinate on the point, though he did not succeed entirely in removing my doubts. A postponement like this for one year would obviously be of no importance as regards the impression made by his story and as regards the discussions and implications attached to it.

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose

ihn außerdem durch die Nanja aus einem Buch, das mit Illustrationen geschmückt war, darüber vorlesen. Das Hauptgewicht bei der Mitteilung fiel natürlich auf die Passionsgeschichte. Die Nanja, die sehr fromm und abergläubisch war, gab ihre Erläuterungen dazu, mußte aber auch alle Einwendungen und Zweifel des kleinen Kritikers anhören. Wenn die Kämpfe, die ihn nun zu erschüttern begannen, schließlich in einen Sieg des Glaubens ausliefen, so war der Einfluß der Nanja nicht unbeteiligt daran.

Was er mir als Erinnerung von seinen Reaktionen auf die Einführung in die Religion mitteilte, traf zunächst auf meinen entschiedenen Un­nachfolger. Das konnten, meinte ich, nicht die Gedanken eines 4½- bis 5jährigen Kindes sein; wahrscheinlich schob er in diese frühe Vergangenheit zurück, was aus dem Nachdenken des bald 30jährigen Erwachsenen entsprang 1. Allein der Patient wollte von dieser Korrektur nichts wissen; es gelang nicht, ihn wie bei so vielen anderen Urteilsverschie­denheiten zwischen uns zu überführen; der Zusammenhang seiner erinnerten Gedanken mit seinen berichteten Symptomen sowie deren Einfü­gung in seine sexuelle Entwicklung nötigten mich schließlich, vielmehr ihm Glauben zu schenken. Ich sagte mir dann auch, daß gerade die Kritik gegen die Lehren der Religion, die ich dem Kinde nicht zutrauen wollte, nur von einer verschwindenden Minderzahl der Erwachsenen zustande gebracht wird.

Ich werde nun das Material seiner Erinnerungen vorbringen und erst dann nach einem Weg suchen, der zum Verständnis desselben führt.

Der Eindruck, den er von der Erzählung der heiligen Geschichte emp­fing, war, wie er berichtet, anfangs kein angenehmer. Er sträubte sich zuerst gegen den Leidenscharakter der Person Christi, dann gegen den ganzen Zusammenhang seiner Geschichte. Er richtete seine unzufriedene Kritik gegen Gottvater. Wenn er

1 Ich machte auch wiederholt den Versuch, die Geschichte des Kranken wenigstens um ein Jahr vorzuschieben, also die Verführung auf 4½ Jahre, den Traum auf den fünfzehnten Geburtstag usw. zu verlegen. An den Intervallen war ja nichts zu gewinnen, allein der Patient blieb hierin ungebändig, ohne mich übrigens vom letzten Zweifel daran befreien zu können. Für den Eindruck, den seine Geschichte machte, und alle daraus gezügelten Erörterungen und Folgerungen wäre ein solcher Aufschub um ein Jahr offen­bar gleichgültig.
were almighty, then it was his fault that men were wicked and tormented others and were sent to Hell for it. He ought to have made them good; he was responsible himself for all wickedness and all torments. The patient took objection to the command that we should turn the other cheek if our right cheek is smitten, and to the fact that Christ had wished on the Cross\(^1\) that the cup might be taken away from him, as well as to the fact that no miracle had taken place to prove that he was the Son of God. Thus his acuteness was on the alert, and was able to search out with remorseless severity the weak points of the sacred narrative.

But to this rationalistic criticism there were very soon added ruminations and doubts, which betray to us that hidden impulses were also at work. One of the first questions which he addressed to his Nanya was whether Christ had had a behind too. His Nanya informed him that he had been a god and also a man. As a man he had had and done all the same things as other men. This did not satisfy him at all, but he succeeded in finding consolation of his own by saying to himself that the behind is really only a continuation of the legs. But hardly had he pacified his dread of having to humiliate the sacred figure, when it flared up again as the further question arose whether Christ used to shit too. He did not venture to put this question to his pious Nanya, but he himself found a way out, and she could not have shown him a better. Since Christ had made wine out of nothing, he could also have made food into nothing and in this way have avoided defaecating.

We shall be in a better position to understand these ruminations if we return to a piece of his sexual development which we have already mentioned. We know that, after the rebuff from his Nanya [p. 24 f.] and the consequent suppression of the beginnings of genital activity, his sexual life developed in the direction of sadism and masochism. He tormented and ill-treated small animals, imagined himself beating horses, and on the other hand imagined the heir to the throne being beaten.* In his sadism he maintained his ancient identification with his father; but in his masochism he chose him as a sexual object. He was deep in a phase of the pregenital organization which I

---

\(^1\) [This should, of course, be the Mount of Olives. Freud informed the translators that the mistake originated from the patient himself.]

\(^2\) Especially on the penis (see pp. 26 [and 47]).

---

Zu dieser rationalistischen Kritik gesellten sich aber sehr bald Grübelien und Zweifel, die uns die Mitarbeit geheimer Regungen verraten können. Eine der ersten Fragen, die er an die Nanja richtete, war, ob Christus auch einen Hintern gehabt habe. Die Nanja gab die Auskunft, er sei ein Gott gewesen und auch ein Mensch. Als Mensch habe er alles gehabt und getan wie die anderen Menschen. Das befriedigte ihn nun gar nicht, aber er wußte sich selbst zu trösten, indem er sich sagte, der Hintere sei ja nur die Fortsetzung der Beine. Die kaum beschwichtigte Angst, die heilige Person erniedrigen zu müssen, flammte wieder auf, als ihm die Frage auftraute, ob Christus auch geschissen habe. Die Frage getraute er sich nicht, der frommen Nanja vorzulegen, aber er fand selbst eine Ausflucht, die sie ihm nicht hätte besser zeigen können. Da Christus Wein aus dem Nichts gemacht, hätte er auch das Essen zu nichts machen und sich so die Defäkation ersparen können.

Wir werden uns dem Verständnis dieser Grübelien nähern, wenn wir an ein vorhin besprochenes Stück seiner Sexualentwicklung anknüpfen. Wir wissen, daß sich sein Sexualleben seit der Zurückweisung durch die Nanja [S. 143 f.] und die damit verbundene Unterdrückung der beginnenden Genitalbetätigung nach den Richtungen des Sadismus und Masochismus entwickelt hatte. Er quälte, mißhandelte kleine Tiere, phantasisierte vom Schlagen der Pferde, anderseits vom Geschlagenwerden des Thronfolgers. Im Sadismus hielt er die uralte Identifizierung mit dem Vater aufrecht, im Masochismus hatte er sich diesen zum Sexualobjekt erkoren. Er befand sich voll in einer Phase der prägenitalen Organi-
regard as the predisposition to obsessional neurosis. The operation of the dream, which brought him under the influence of the primal scene, could have led him to make the advance to the genital organization, and to transform his masochism towards his father into a feminine attitude towards him—into homosexuality. But the dream did not bring about this advance; it ended in a state of anxiety. His relation to his father might have been expected to proceed from the sexual aim of being beaten by him to the next aim, namely, that of being copulated with by him like a woman; but in fact, owing to the opposition of his narcissistic masculinity, this relation was thrown back to an even more primitive stage. It was displaced on to a father-surrogate, and at the same time split off in the shape of a fear of being eaten by the wolf. But this by no means disposed of his narcissistic masculinity, this relation was thrown back to an even more primitive stage. It was displaced on to a father-surrogate, and at the same time split off in the shape of a fear of being eaten by the wolf. But this by no means disposed of it. On the contrary, we can only do justice to the apparent complexity of the state of affairs by bearing firmly in mind the co-existence of the three sexual trends which were directed by the boy towards his father. From the time of the dream onwards, in his unconscious he was homosexual, and in his neurosis he was at the level of cannibalism; while the earlier masochistic attitude remained the dominant one. All three currents had passive sexual aims; there was the same object, and the same sexual impulse, but that impulse had become split up along three different levels.

His knowledge of the sacred story now gave him a chance of sublimating his predominant masochistic attitude towards his father. He became Christ—which was made specially easy for him on account of their having the same birthday. Thus he became something great and also (a fact upon which enough stress was not laid for the moment) a man. We catch a glimpse of his repressed homosexual attitude in his doubting whether Christ could have a behind, for these ruminations can have had no other meaning but the question whether he himself could be used by his father like a woman—like his mother in the primal scene. When we come to the solution of the other obsessional ideas, we shall find this interpretation confirmed. His reflection that it was insulting to bring the sacred figure into relation with such insinuations corresponded to the repression of his passive homosexuality. It will be noticed that he was...

\[1 \text{[See the paper Freud had written on the subject not long before the present one (1913b).]}

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose


Die Kenntnis der heiligen Geschichte gab ihm nun die Möglichkeit, die vorherrschende masochistische Einstellung zum Vater zu sublimieren. Er wurde Christus, was ihm durch den gleichen Geburtstag besonders erleichtert war. Damit war er etwas Großes geworden und aäch — worauf vorläufig noch nicht genug Akzent fiel — ein Mann. In dem Zweifel, ob Christus einen Hintern haben kann, schimmert die verdrängte homosexuelle Einstellung durch, denn die Grubelei konnte nichts anderes bedeuten als die Frage, ob er vom Vater gebraucht werden könne wie ein Weib, wie die Mutter in der Urszene. Wenn wir zur Auflösung der anderen Zwangsideen kommen, werden wir diese Deutung bestätigt finden. Der Verdrängung der passiven Homosexualität entsprach nun das Bedenken, daß es schimpflich sei, die heilige Person mit solchen Zu­mutungen in Verbindung zu bringen. Man merkt, er bemühte sich, seine...
endeavouring to keep his new sublimation free from the admixture which it derived from sources in the repressed. But he was unsuccessful.

We do not as yet understand why he also rebelled against the passive character of Christ and against his ill-treatment by his Father, and in this way began also to renounce his previous masochistic ideal, even in its sublimation. We may assume that this second conflict was especially favourable to the emergence of the humiliating obsessional thoughts from the first conflict (between the dominant masochistic and the repressed homosexual currents), for it is only natural that in a mental conflict all the currents upon one side or the other should combine with one another, even though they have the most diverse origins. Some fresh information teaches us the motive of this rebelling and at the same time of the criticisms which he levelled at religion.

His sexual researches, too, gained something from what he was told about the sacred story. So far he had had no reason for supposing that children only came from women. On the contrary, his Nanya had given him to believe that he was his father’s child, while his sister was his mother’s [p. 17]; and this closer connection with his father had been very precious to him. He now heard that Mary was called the Mother of God. So all children came from women, and what his Nanya had said to him was no longer tenable. Moreover, as a result of what he was told, he was bewildered as to who Christ’s father really was. He was inclined to think it was Joseph, as he heard that he and Mary had always lived together, but his Nanya said that Joseph was only ‘like’ his father and that his real father was God. He could make nothing of that. He only understood this much: if the question was one that could be argued about at all, then the relation between father and son could not be such an intimate one as he had always imagined it to be.

The boy had some kind of inkling of the ambivalent feelings towards the father which are an underlying factor in all religions, and attacked his religion on account of the slackening which it implied in this relation between son and father. Naturally his opposition soon ceased to take the form of doubting the truth of the doctrine, and turned instead directly against the figure of God. God had treated his son harshly and cruelly, but he was no better towards men; he had sacrificed his own


Wir verstehen es noch nicht, warum er sich nun auch gegen den passiven Charakter Christi und gegen die Mißhandlung durch den Vater sträubte, und damit auch sein bisheriges masochistisches Ideal, selbst in seiner Sublimierung, zu verleugnen begann. Wir dürfen annehmen, daß dieser zweite Konflikt dem Hervortreten der erniedrigenden Zwangsgedanken aus dem ersten Konflikt (zwischen herrschender masochischer und verdrängter homosexueller Strömung) besonders günstig war, denn es ist nur natürlich, daß sich in einem seelischen Konflikt alle Gegensprengungen, wenn auch aus den verschiedensten Quellen, miteinander summieren. Das Motiv seines Sträubens und somit der an der Religion geübten Kritik werden wir aus neuen Mitteilungen kennenlernen.

Aus den Mitteilungen über die heilige Geschichte hatte auch seine Sexualforschung Gewinn gezogen. Bisher hatte er keinen Grund zur Annahme gehabt, daß die Kinder nur von der Frau kommen. Im Gegenteil, die Nanja hatte ihn glauben lassen, er sei das Kind des Vaters, die Schwester der Mutter [S. 138], und diese nähere Beziehung zum Vater war ihm sehr wertvoll gewesen. Nun hörte er, daß Maria die Gottesgebarerin hieß. Also kamen die Kinder von der Frau und die Angabe der Nanja war nicht mehr zu halten. Ferner wurde er durch die Erzählungen irre gemacht, wer eigentlich der Vater Christi war. Er war geneigt, Josef dafür zu halten, denn er hörte ja, daß sie immer mitsammen gelebt hatten, aber die Nanja sagte: Josef war nur wie sein Vater, der eigentliche Vater sei Gott gewesen. Daraus konnte er nichts machen. Er verstand nur soviel: wenn man überhaupt darüber diskutieren konnte, so war das Verhältnis zwischen Vater und Sohn kein so inniges, wie er sich’s immer vorgestellt hatte.

Der Knabe fühlte gewissermaßen die Gefühlsambivalenz gegen den Vater, die in allen Religionen niedergelegt ist, heraus und griff seine Religion wegen der Lockerung dieses Vaterverhältnisses an. Natürlich hörte seine Opposition bald auf, ein Zweifel an der Wahrheit der Lehre zu sein, und wandte sich dafür direkt gegen die Person Gottes. Gott hatte seinen Sohn hart und grausam behandelt, aber er war nicht besser gegen die Menschen.
son and had ordered Abraham to do the same. He began to fear God.

If he was Christ, then his father was God. But the God which religion forced upon him was not a true substitute for the father whom he had loved and whom he did not want to have stolen from him. His love for this father of his gave him his critical acuteness. He resisted God in order to be able to cling to his father; and in doing this he was really upholding the old father against the new. He was faced by a trying part of the process of detaching himself from his father.

His old love for his father, which had been manifest in his earliest period, was therefore the source of his energy in struggling against God and of his acuteness in criticizing religion. But on the other hand this hostility to the new God was not an original reaction either; it had its prototype in a hostile impulse against his father, which had come into existence under the influence of the anxiety-dream, and it was at bottom only a revival of that impulse. The two opposing currents of feeling, which were to rule the whole of his later life, met here in the ambivalent struggle over the question of religion. It followed, moreover, that what this struggle produced in the shape of symptoms (the blasphemous ideas, the compulsion which came over him of thinking 'God—shit', 'God—swine') were genuine compromise-products, as we shall see from the analysis of these ideas in connection with his anal erotism.

Some other obsessional symptoms of a less typical sort pointed with equal certainty to his father, while at the same time showing the connection between the obsessional neurosis and the earlier occurrences.

A part of the pious ritual by means of which he eventually atoned for his blasphemies was the command to breathe in a ceremonious manner under certain conditions. Each time he made the sign of the cross he was obliged to breathe in deeply or to exhale forcibly. In his native tongue 'breath' is the same word as 'spirit', so that here the Holy Ghost came in. He was obliged to breathe in the Holy Spirit, or to breathe out the evil spirits which he had heard and read about. He ascribed too to these evil spirits the blasphemous thoughts for which he had to inflict such heavy penance upon himself. He was, however, also

---

1 This symptom, as we shall hear, had developed after his sixth year and when he could already read.

---

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose


Es war also die alte, in früherer Zeit offenbar gewordene Liebe zu seinem Vater, der er die Energie zur Bekämpfung Gottes und den Scharfsinn zur Kritik der Religion entnahm. Aber anderseits war diese Feindseligkeit gegen den neuen Gott auch kein ursprünglicher Akt, sie hatte ein Vorbild in einer feindseligen Regung gegen den Vater, die unter dem Einfluß des Angsträumes entstanden war, und war im Grunde nur ein Wiederaufleben derselben. Die beiden gegensätzlichen Gefühlssregungen, die sein ganzes späteres Leben regieren sollten, trafen sich hier zum Ambivalenzkampfe beim Thema der Religion. Was sich aus diesem Kampfe als Symptom ergab, die blasphemischen Ideen, der Zwang, der ihm überfiel, Gott — Dreck, Gott — Schwein zu denken, war darum auch ein richtiges Kompromißergebnis, wie die Analyse dieser Ideen im Zusammenhange der Analerotik uns zeigen wird.

Einige andere Zwangssymptome von minder typischer Art führen ebenso sicher auf den Vater, lassen aber auch den Zusammenhang der Zwangsneurose mit den früheren Zufällen erkennen.

Zu dem Frömmigkeitszeremoniell, mit dem er am Ende seine Gotteslästerungen sühnte, gehörte auch das Gebot, unter gewissen Bedingungen in feierlicher Weise zu atmen. Beim Kreuzschlagen mußte er jedesmal tief einatmen oder stark ausatmen. Hauch ist in seiner Sprache gleich Geist. Das war also die Rolle des Heiligen Geistes. Er mußte den Heiligen Geist einatmen oder die bösen Geister, von denen er gehört und gelesen hatte, ausatmen. Diesen bösen Geistern schrieb er auch die blasphemischen Gedanken zu, für die er sich soviel Buße auferlegen mußte.

1 Dies Symptom hatte sich, wie wir hören werden, mit dem sechsten Jahr, als er lesen konnte, entwickelt.
obliged to exhale when he saw beggars, or cripples, or ugly, old, or wretched-looking people; but he could think of no way of connecting this obsession with the spirits. The only account he could give to himself was that he did it so as not to become like such people.

Eventually, in connection with a dream, the analysis elicited the information that the breathing out at the sight of pitable-looking people had begun only after his sixth year and was related to his father. He had not seen his father for many months, when one day his mother said she was going to take the children with her to the town and show them something that would very much please them. When one day he saw beggars, or cripples, or ugly, old, or wretched-looking people in whose presence he was obliged to exhale when he saw beggars, or cripples, or ugly, old, or wretched-looking people; he looked ill, and the boy felt very sorry for him. His father was thus the prototype of all the cripples, beggars, and poor people in whose presence he was obliged to breathe out; just as a father is the prototype of the bogies that people see in anxiety-states, and of the caricatures that are drawn to bring derision upon some one. We shall learn elsewhere [p. 88] that this attitude of compassion was derived from a particular detail of the primal scene, a detail which only became operative in the obsessional neurosis at this late moment.

Thus his determination not to become like cripples (which was the motive of his breathing out in their presence) was his old identification with his father transformed into the negative. But in so doing he was also copying his father in the positive sense, for the heavy breathing was an imitation of the noise which he had heard coming from his father during the intercourse.1 He had derived the Holy Ghost from this manifestation of male sensual excitement. Repression had turned this breathing into an evil spirit, which had another genealogy as well: namely, the malaria [p. 37] from which he had been suffering at the time of the primal scene.

His repudiation of these evil spirits corresponded to an unmistakable strain of asceticism in him which also found expression in other reactions. When he heard that Christ had once cast out some evil spirits into a herd of swine which then rushed down a precipice, he thought of how his sister in the earliest years of her childhood, before he could remember, had rolled down on to the beach from the cliff-path above the harbour. She too was an evil spirit and a swine. It was a short

---

1 Assuming the reality of the primal scene.
road from here to 'God—swine'. His father himself had shown that he was no less of a slave to sensuality. When he was told the story of the first of mankind he was struck by the similarity of his lot to Adam's. In conversation with his Nanya he professed hypocritical surprise that Adam should have allowed himself to be dragged into misfortune by a woman, and promised her that he would never marry. A hostility towards women, due to his seduction by his sister, found strong expression at this time. And it was destined to disturb him often enough in his later erotic life. His sister came to be the permanent embodiment for him of temptation and sin. After he had been to confession into sin, and in a moment he had provoked a quarrel with her to be dragged into misfortune by a woman, and promised her his seduction by his sister, found strong expression at this time. His brother attached no importance to piety and set no store by the truth of religion. His piety sank away along with his dependence upon his father, who was now replaced by a new and more sociable father. This did not take place, however, without one last flicker of the obsessional neurosis; and from this he particularly remembered the obsession of having to think of the Holy Trinity whenever he saw three heaps of dung lying together in the road. In fact he never gave way to fresh ideas without making one last attempt at clinging to what had lost its values for him. When his tutor discouraged him from hier führte ein kurzer Weg zu Gott — Schwein. Der Vater selbst hatte sich als ebenso von Sinnlichkeit beherrscht erwiesen. Als er die Geschichte der ersten Menschen erfuhr, fiel ihm die Ähnlichkeit seines Schicksals mit dem Adams auf. Er wunderte sich heuchlerischerweise im Gespräch mit der Nanja, daß Adam sich durch ein Weib hatte ins Unglück stürzen lassen, und versprach der Nanja, er werde nie heiraten. Eine Verfeindung mit dem Weibe wegen der Verführung durch die Schwester schaffte sich um diese Zeit starken Ausdruck. Sie sollte ihn in seinem späteren Liebesleben noch oft genug stören. Die Schwester wurde ihm zur dauernden Verkörperung der Versuchung und der Stunde. Wenn er gebeichtet hatte, kam er sich rein und sündenfrei vor. Dann schien es ihm aber, als ob die Schwester darauf lauerte, ihn wieder in Stunde zu stürzen, und ehe er sich's versah, hatte er eine Streitszene mit der Schwester provoziert, durch die er wieder sündig wurde. So war er genötigt, die Tatsache der Verführung immer wieder von Neuem zu reproduzieren. Seine blasphemischen Gedanken hatte er übrigens, so sehr sie ihn drückten, niemals in der Beichte preisgegeben.

Wir sind unversehens in die Symptomatik der späteren Jahre der Zwangsnervose geraten und wollen darum mit Hinwegsetzung über soviel, was dazwischen liegt, über ihren Ausgang berichten. Wir wissen schon, daß sie, von ihrem permanenten Bestand abgesehen, zeitweise Verstärkungen erfuhr, das eine Mal, was uns noch nicht durchsichtig sein kann, als ein Knabe in derselben Straße starb, mit dem er sich identifizieren konnte. Als er zehn Jahre alt war, bekam er einen deutschen Hofmeister, der sehr bald großen Einfluß auf ihn gewann. Es ist sehr lehrreich, daß seine ganze schwere Frömmigkeit dahinschwand, um nie wieder aufzuleben, nachdem er gemerkt und in belehrenden Gesprächen mit dem Lehrer erfahren hatte, daß dieser Vaterersatz keinen Wert auf Frömmigkeit legte und nichts von der Wahrheit der Religion hielt. Die Frömmigkeit fiel mit der Abhängigkeit vom Vater, der nun von einem neuen, umgänglicheren Vater abgelöst wurde. Dies geschah allerdings nicht ohne ein letztes Aufblitzen der Zwangsnervose, von dem der Zwang besonders erinnert wurde, an die Heilige Dreieinigkeit zu denken, so oft er auf der Straße drei Häufchen Kot beisammenliegen sah. Er gab eben nie einer Anregung nach, ohne noch einen Versuch zu machen, das Entwertete festzuhalten. Als der Lehrer ihm von den Grausam-
from his cruelties to small animals he did indeed put an end to those misdeeds, but not until he had again cut up caterpillars for a last time to his thorough satisfaction. He still behaved in just the same way during the analytic treatment, for he showed a habit of producing transitory ‘negative reactions’; every time something had been conclusively cleared up, he attempted to contradict the effect for a short while by an aggravation of the symptom which had been cleared up. It is quite the rule, as we know, for children to treat prohibitions in the same kind of way. When they have been rebuked for something (for instance, because they are making an unbearable din), they repeat it once more after the prohibition before stopping it. In this way they gain the point of apparently stopping of their own accord and of disobeying the prohibition.

Under the German tutor’s influence there arose a new and better sublimation of the patient’s sadism, which, with the approach of puberty, had then gained the upper hand over his masochism. He developed an enthusiasm for military affairs, for uniforms, weapons and horses, and used them as food for continual day-dreams. Thus, under a man’s influence, he had got free from his passive attitudes, and found himself for the time being on fairly normal lines. It was as an after-effect of his affection for the tutor, who left him soon afterwards, that in his later life he preferred German things (as, for instance, physicians, sanatoria, women) to those belonging to his native country (representing his father)—a fact which was incidentally of great advantage to the transference during the treatment.

There was another dream, which belongs to the period before his emancipation by the tutor, and which I mention because it was forgotten until its appearance during the treatment. He saw himself riding on a horse and pursued by a gigantic caterpillar. He recognized in this dream an allusion to an earlier one from the period before the tutor, which we had interpreted long before. In this earlier dream he saw the Devil dressed in black and in the upright posture with which the gigantic caterpillar. He recognized in

The patient had soon guessed that this Devil was the Demon out of a well-known poem, and that the dream itself was a version of a very popular picture representing the Demon in a love-scene

1 [Lermontov’s ‘The Demon’.]
with a girl. The snail was in the woman's place, as being a perfect female sexual symbol. Guided by the Demon's pointing gesture, we were soon able to give as the dream's meaning that the patient was longing for some one who should give him the last pieces of information that were still missing upon the riddle of sexual intercourse, just as his father had given him the first in the primal scene long before.

In connection with the later dream, in which the female symbol was replaced by the male one, he remembered a particular event which had occurred a short time before the dream. Riding on the estate one day, he passed a peasant who was lying asleep with his little boy beside him. The latter woke his father and said something to him, whereupon the father began to abuse the rider and to pursue him till he rode off hastily. There was also a second recollection, that on the same estate there were trees that were quite white, spun all over by caterpillars. We can see that he took flight from the realization of the phantasy of the son lying with his father, and that he brought in the white trees in order to make an allusion to the anxiety-dream of the white wolves on the walnut tree. It was thus a direct outbreak of dread of the feminine attitude towards men against which he had at first protected himself by his religious sublimation and was soon to protect himself still more effectively by the military one [p. 69].

It would, however, be a great mistake to suppose that after the removal of the obsessional symptoms no permanent effects of the obsessional neurosis remained behind. The process had led to a victory for the faith of piety over the rebelliousness of critical research, and had had the repression of the homosexual attitude as its necessary condition. Lasting disadvantages resulted from both these factors. His intellectual activity remained seriously impaired after this first great defeat. He developed no zeal for learning, he showed no more of the acuteness with which at the tender age of five he had criticized and dissected the doctrines of religion. The repression of his overpowerful homosexuality, which was accomplished during the anxiety-dream, reserved that important impulse for the unconscious, kept it directed towards its original aim, and withdrew it from all the sublimations to which it is susceptible in other circumstances. For this reason the patient was without all those social interests which give a content to life. It was only when,
during the analytic treatment, it became possible to liberate his shackled homosexuality that this state of affairs showed any improvement; and it was a most remarkable experience to see how (without any direct advice from the physician) each piece of homosexual libido which was set free sought out some application in life and some attachment to the great common concerns of mankind.

Die Zwangsneurose
der analytischen Kur die Lösung dieser Fesselung der Homosexualität gelang, konnte sich der Sachverhalt zum Besseren wenden, und es war sehr merkwürdig mitzuerleben, wie—ohne direkte Mahnung des Arztes—jedes befreite Stück der homosexuellen Libido eine Anwendung im Leben und eine Anheftung an die großen gemeinsamen Geschäfte der Menschheit suchte.
ANAL EROTISM AND THE CASTRATION COMPLEX

I must beg the reader to bear in mind that I obtained this history of an infantile neurosis as a by-product, so to speak, during the analysis of an illness in mature years. I have therefore been obliged to put it together from even smaller fragments than are usually at one's disposal for purposes of synthesis. This task, which is not difficult in other respects, finds a natural limit when it is a question of forcing a structure which is itself in many dimensions on to the two-dimensional descriptive plane. I must therefore content myself with bringing forward fragmentary portions, which the reader can then put together into a living whole. The obsessional neurosis that has been described grew up, as has been repeatedly emphasized, on the basis of a sadistic-anal constitution. But we have hitherto discussed only one of the two chief factors—the patient's sadism and its transformations. Everything that concerns his anal erotism has intentionally been left on one side so that it might be brought together and discussed at this later stage.

Analysts have long been agreed that the multifarious instinc­tual impulses which are comprised under the name of anal erotism play an extraordinarily important part, which it would be quite impossible to over-estimate, in building up sexual life and mental activity in general. It is equally agreed that one of the most important manifestations of the transformed erotism derived from this source is to be found in the treatment of money, for in the course of life this precious material attracts on to itself the psychical interest which was originally proper to faeces, the product of the anal zone. We are accustomed to trace back interest in money, in so far as it is of a libidinal and not of a rational character, to excretory pleasure, and we expect normal people to keep their relations to money entirely free from libidinal influences and regulate them according to the demands of reality.

In our patient, at the time of his later illness, these relations

1 [See Freud's paper on 'Character and Anal Erotism' (1908b).]
were disturbed to a particularly severe degree, and this fact was not the least considerable element in his lack of independence and his incapacity for dealing with life. He had become very rich through legacies from his father and uncle; it was obvious that he attached great importance to being taken for rich, and he was liable to feel very much hurt if he was undervalued in this respect. But he had no idea how much he possessed, what his expenditure was, or what balance was left over. It was hard to say whether he ought to be called a miser or a spendthrift. He behaved now in this way and now in that, but never in a way that seemed to show any consistent intention. Some striking traits, which I shall further discuss below, might have led one to regard him as a hardened plutocrat, who considered his wealth as his greatest personal advantage, and who would never for a moment allow emotional interests to weigh against pecuniary ones. Yet he did not value other people by their wealth, and, on the contrary, showed himself on many occasions unassuming, helpful, and charitable. Money, in fact, had been withdrawn from his conscious control, and meant for him something quite different.

I have already mentioned (p. 23) that I viewed with grave suspicion the way in which he consoled himself for the loss of his sister, who had become his closest companion during her latter years, with the reflection that now he would not have to share his parents' inheritance with her. But what was perhaps even more striking was the calmness with which he was able to relate this, as though he had no comprehension of the coarseness of feeling to which he was thus confessing. It is true that analysis rehabilitated him by showing that his grief for his sister had merely undergone a displacement; but it then became quite inexplicable why he should have tried to find a substitute for his sister in an increase of wealth.

He himself was puzzled by his behaviour in another connection. After his father's death the property that was left was divided between him and his mother. His mother administered it, and, as he himself admitted, met his pecuniary claims irreproachably and liberally. Yet every discussion of money matters that took place between them used to end with the most violent reproaches on his side, to the effect that she did not love him, that she was trying to economize at his expense, and that she would probably rather see him dead so as to have

Verhältnis in besonders argem Maße gestört, und dies war nicht das Geringste an seiner Unselbständigkei und Lebensunüchtigkeit. Er war durch Erbschaft von Vater und Onkel sehr reich geworden, legte manifesterweise viel Wert darauf, für reich zu gelten, und konnte sich sehr kränken, wenn man ihn darin unterschätzte. Aber er wußte nicht, wieviel er beßt, was er verausgabte, was er übrig behielt. Es war schwer zu sagen, ob man ihn geizig oder verschwenderisch zeigen sollte. Er nahm sich bald so, bald anders, niemals in einer Art, die auf eine konsequente Absicht hindeuten konnte. Nach einigen auffälligen Zügen, die ich weiter unten anführen werde, konnte man ihn für einen verstockten Geldprozten halten, der in dem Reichtum den größten Vorzug seiner Person erblickt und Gefühlsinteressen neben Geldinteressen nicht einmal in Betracht ziehen läßt. Aber er schätzte andere nicht nach ihrer Reichtum ein und zeigte sich bei vielen Gelegenheiten vielmehr bescheiden, hilfsbereit und mitleidig. Das Geld war eben seiner bewußten Verfügung entzogen und bedeutete für ihn irgendein anderes.

Ich habe schon erwähnt (S. 142), daß ich die Art sehr bedenklich fand, wie er sich über den Verlust der Schwester, die in den letzten Jahren sein bester Kamerad geworden war, mit der Überlegung tröstete: Jetzt brauche er die Erbschaft von den Eltern nicht mit ihr zu teilen. Auffälliger vielleicht war noch die Ruhe, mit welcher er dies erzählen konnte, als hätte er kein Verständnis für die so eingestandene Gefühlslösigkeit. Die Analyse rehabilitierte ihn zwar, indem sie zeigte, daß der Schmerz um die Schwester nur eine Verschiebung erfahren hatte, aber es wurde nun erst recht verständlich, daß er in der Bereicherung einen Ersatz für die Schwester hatte finden wollen.

sole control over the money. His mother used then to protest her disinterestedness with tears, and he would thereupon grow ashamed of himself and declare with justice that he thought nothing of the sort of her. But he was sure to repeat the same scene at the first opportunity.

Many incidents, of which I will relate two, show that, for a long time before the analysis, faces had had this significance of money for him. At a time when his bowel as yet played no part in his complaint, he once paid a visit to a poor cousin of his in a large town. As he left him he reproached himself for not giving this relative financial support, and immediately afterwards had what was 'perhaps the most urgent need for relieving his bowels that he had experienced in his life'. Two years later he did in fact settle an annuity upon this cousin. Here is the other case. At the age of eighteen, while he was preparing for his leaving-examination at school, he visited a friend and came to an agreement with him on a plan which seemed advisable on account of the dread which they shared of failing in the examination. It had been decided to bribe the school servant, and the patient's share of the sum to be provided was naturally the larger. On the way home he thought to himself that he should be glad to give even more if only he could succeed in getting through, if only he could be sure that nothing would happen to him in the examination—and an accident of another sort really did happen to him before he reached his own front door.

We shall be prepared to hear that during his later illness he suffered from disturbances of his intestinal function which were very obstinate, though various circumstances caused them to fluctuate in intensity. When he came under my treatment he had become accustomed to enemas, which were given him by an attendant; spontaneous evacuations did not occur for months at a time, unless a sudden excitement from some particular direction intervened, as a result of which normal activity of the bowels might set in for a few days. His principal subject of

*The German word 'Durchfall' means literally 'falling through'; it is used in the sense of 'falling', as in an examination, and also of 'diarrhoea'. The patient informed me that his native tongue has no parallel to the familiar German use of 'Durchfall' as a description for disturbances of the bowels.*

Das Geld zu verfügen. Die Mutter beteuerte dann weinend ihre Un­
eigennützigkeit, er schämte sich und konnte mit Recht versichern, daß er das gar nicht von ihr denke, aber er war sicher, dieselbe Szene bei näch­
stem Gelegenheit zu wiederholen.

Daß der Kot für ihn lange Zeit vor der Analyse Geldbedeutung gehabt hat, geht aus vielen Zufällen hervor, von denen ich zwei mitteilen will. In einer Zeit, da der Darm noch unbeteiligt an seinem Leiden war, besuchte er einmal in einer großen Stadt einen armen Vetter. Als er wegging, machte er sich Vorwürfe, daß er diesen Verwandten nicht mit Geld unterstützte, und bekam unmittelbar darauf den »vielleicht stärksten Stuhldrang seines Lebens«. Zwei Jahre später setzte er wirklich diesem Vetter eine Rente aus. Der andere Fall: Mit 18 Jahren während der Vorbereitung zur Maturitätsprüfung besuchte er einen Kollegen und verabredete mit ihm, was die gemeinsame Angst, bei der Prüfung durchzufallen, ratsam erscheinen ließ. Man hatte beschlossen, den Schul­diener zu bestechen, und sein Anteil an der aufzubringenden Summe war natürlicherweise der größte. Auf dem Heimwege dachte er, er wolle gern noch mehr geben, wenn er nur durchkomme, wenn ihm bei der Prüfung nur nichts passiere, und wirklich passierte ihm ein anderes Malheur, ehe er noch bei seiner Haustüre war.

Wir sind darauf vorbereitet zu hören, daß er in seiner späteren Er­
ekrankung an sehr harnmäckigen, wenn auch mit verschiedenen Anlässen schwankenden Störungen der Darmlaufunktion litt. Als er in meine Be­
handlung trat, hatte er sich an Lavements gewöhnt, die ihm ein Begleiter machte; spontane Entleerungen kamen Monate hindurch nicht vor, wenn nicht eine plötzliche Erregung von einer bestimmten Seite her dazu kam, in deren Folge sich normale Darmtätigkeit für einige Tage herstellen konnte. Seine

1 Der Patient teilte mit, daß seine Muttersprache die im Deutschen bekannte Ver­wendung des Wortes »Durchfall« zur Bezeichnung von Darmlaufungen nicht kennt.

2 Diese Redensart ist in der Muttersprache des Patienten gleichsinnig wie im Deutschen.
 complaint was that for him the world was hidden in a veil, or that he was cut off from the world by a veil. This veil was torn only at one moment—when, after an enema, the contents of the bowel left the intestinal canal; and he then felt well and normal again.1

The colleague to whom I referred the patient for a report upon his intestinal condition was perspicacious enough to explain it as being a functional one, or even psychically determined, and to abstain from any active medicinal treatment. Moreover, neither this nor dieting were of any use. During the years of analytic treatment there was no spontaneous motion—apart from the sudden influences that I have mentioned. The patient allowed himself to be convinced that if the intractable organ received more intensive treatment things would only be made worse, and contented himself with bringing on an evacuation once or twice a week by means of an enema or a purgative.

In discussing these intestinal troubles I have given more space to the patient's later illness than has been my plan elsewhere in this work, which is concerned with his infantile neurosis. I have done so for two reasons: first, because the intestinal symptoms were in point of fact carried forward from the infantile neurosis into the later one with little alteration, and secondly, because they played a principal part in the conclusion of the treatment.

We know how important doubt is to the physician who is analysing an obsessional neurosis. It is the patient's strongest weapon, the favourite expedient of his resistance. This same doubt enabled our patient to lie entrenched behind a respectful indifference and to allow the efforts of the treatment to slip past him for years together. Nothing changed, and there was no way of convincing him. At last I recognized the importance of the intestinal trouble for my purposes; it represented the small trait of hysteria which is regularly to be found at the root of an obsessional neurosis. I promised the patient a

1 The effect was the same whether he had the enema given him by some one else or whether he managed it himself.

2 [Cf. the case history of the 'Rat Man' (1909d), Standard Ed., 10, 241–3.]

3 [Freud had already remarked on this at the beginning of Section II of his second paper on 'The Neuro-Psychoses of Defence' (1896a). He alluded to the point again in Chapter V of Inhibitions, Symptoms and Anxiety (1926d).]

VII] ANAL EROTISM AND CASTRATION 75

Analerotik und Kastrationskomplex

Hauptklage war, daß die Welt für ihn in einen Schleier gehüllt sei, oder er durch einen Schleier von der Welt getrennt sei. Dieser Schleier zerriß nur in den einen Moment, wenn beim Lavement der Darminhalt den Darm verließ, und dann fühlte er sich auch wieder gesund und normal.


complete recovery of his intestinal activity, and by means of this promise made his incredulity manifest. I then had the satisfaction of seeing his doubt dwindle away, as in the course of the work his bowel began, like a hysterically affected organ, to 'join in the conversation', and in a few weeks' time recovered its normal functions after their long impairment.

I now turn back to the patient's childhood—to a time at which it was impossible that faeces could have had the significance of money for him.

Intestinal disorders set in very early with him, and especially in the form which is the most frequent and, among children, the most normal—namely, incontinence. We shall certainly be right, however, in rejecting a pathological explanation of these earliest occurrences, and in regarding them only as evidence of the patient's intention not to let himself be disturbed or checked in the pleasure attached to the function of evacuation. He found a great deal of enjoyment (such as would tally with the natural coarseness of many classes of society, though not of his) in anal jokes and exhibitions, and this enjoyment had been retained by him until after the beginning of his later illness.

During the time of the English governess it repeatedly happened that he and his Nanya had to share that obnoxious lady's bedroom. His Nanya noticed with comprehension the fact that precisely on those nights he made a mess in bed, though otherwise this had ceased to happen a long time before. He was not in the least ashamed of it; it was an expression of defiance against the governess.

A year later (when he was four and a half), during the anxiety period, he happened to make a mess in his knickerbockers in the day-time. He was terribly ashamed of himself, and as he was being cleaned he moaned that he could not go on living like that. He was not in the least ashamed of himself, and as he was being cleaned he moaned that he could not go on living like that. So that in the meantime something had changed; and by following up his lament we came upon the traces of this something. It turned out that the words 'he could not go on living like that' were repeated from some one else. His mother had once* taken him with her when she was walking

[This phrase ("mitsprechen") goes back to the Studies on Hysteria (1895d), Standard Ed., 2, 296 f.]

* When this happened was not exactly fixed; but in any case before the anxiety-dream when he was four, and probably before his parents' absence from home.

Darmstörungen sind sehr frühzeitig bei ihm aufgetreten, vor allem die häufigste und für das Kind normalste, die Inkontinenz. Wir haben aber gewiß recht, wenn wir für diese frühesten Vorfälle eine pathologische Erklärung ablehnen und in ihnen nur einen Beweis für die Absicht sehen, sich in der an die Entleerungsfunktion geknüpften Lust nicht stören oder aufhalten zu lassen. Ein starkes Vergnügen an analen Witzen und Schaustellungen, wie es sonst der natürlichen Derbheit mancher Gesellschaftsklassen entspricht, hatte sich bei ihm über den Beginn der späteren Erkrankung erhalten.

Zur Zeit der englischen Gouvernante traf es sich wiederholt, daß er und die Nanja das Schlafzimmer der Verhafteten teilen mußten. Die Nanja konstatierte dann mit Verständnis, daß er gerade in diesen Nächten ins Bett gemacht hatte, was sonst nicht mehr der Fall gewesen war. Er schämte sich dessen gar nicht; es war eine Äußerung des Trotzes gegen die Gouvernante.

Ein Jahr später (zu 4½ Jahren), in der Angstzeit, passierte es ihm, daß er bei Tage die Hose schmutzig machte. Er schämte sich entsetzlich, und jammerte, als er gereinigt wurde: er könne so nicht mehr leben. Daß es sich ihm also etwas verändert, auf dessen Spur wir durch die Verfolgung seiner Klage geführt wurden. Es stellte sich heraus, daß er die Worte: so könne er nicht mehr leben, jemand anderem nachgeredet hatte. Irgendeinmal hat ihn die Mutter mitgenommen, während sie...
down to the station with the doctor who had come to visit her. During this walk she had lamented over her pains and haemorrhages and had broken out in the same words, 'I cannot go on living like this', without imagining that the child whose hand she was holding would keep them in his memory. Thus his lament (which, moreover, he was to repeat on innumerable occasions during his later illness) had the significance of an identification with his mother.

There soon appeared in his recollection what was evidently, in respect both of its date and of its content, a missing intermediate link between these two events. It once happened at the beginning of his anxiety period that his apprehensive mother gave orders that precautions were to be taken to protect the children from dysentery, which had made its appearance in the neighbourhood of the estate. He made enquiries as to what that might be; and after hearing that when you have dysentery you find blood in your stool he became very nervous and declared that there was blood in his own stool; he was afraid he would die of dysentery, but allowed himself to be convinced by an examination that he had made a mistake and had no need to be frightened. We can see that in his later attempt at identification (when he was four and a half) he had dropped any mention of the blood; this was trying to put into effect an identification with his mother, whose haemorrhages he had heard about in the conversation with her doctor. In his later attempt at identification (when he was three and a half) he had made any mention of the blood; he no longer understood himself, for he imagined that he was ashamed of himself and was not aware that he was being shaken by a dread of death, though this was unmistakably revealed in his lament.

At that time his mother, suffering as she was from an abdominal affection, was in general nervous, both about herself and the children; it is most probable that his own nervousness, besides its other motives, was based on an identification with his mother.

Now what can have been the meaning of this identification with his mother?

Between the impudent use he made of his incontinence when he was three and a half, and the horror with which he viewed it when he was four and a half, there lies the dream with which his anxiety period began—the dream which gave him a deferred comprehension of the scene he had experienced when

Die unterleibsleidende Mutter war damals überhaupt ängstlich für sich und die Kinder; es ist durchaus wahrscheinlich, daß seine Angstlichkeit sich neben ihren eigenen Motiven auf die Identifizierung mit der Mutter stützte.

Was sollte nun die Identifizierung mit der Mutter bedeuten?

 Zwischen der kecken Verwendung der Inkontinenz mit 3½ Jahren und dem Entsetzen vor ihr mit 4½ Jahren liegt der Traum, mit dem seine Angstzeit begann, der ihm nachträgliches Verständnis der mit 1½ Jahr-
he was one and a half (p. 45), and an explanation of the part played by women in the sexual act. It is only another step to connect the change in his attitude towards defaecation with this same great revulsion. Dyssenteria was evidently his name for the illness which he had heard his mother lamenting about, and which it was impossible to go on living with; he did not regard his mother's disease as being abdominal but as being intestinal. 

Under the influence of the primal scene he came to the conclusion that his mother had been made ill by what his father had done to her; and his dread of having blood in his stool, of being as ill as his mother, was his repudiation of being identified with her in this sexual scene—the same repudiation with which he awoke from the dream. But the dread was also a proof that in his later elaboration of the primal scene he had put himself in his mother's place and had envied her this relation with his father. The organ by which his identification with women, his passive homosexual attitude to men, was able to express itself was the anal zone. The disorders in the function of this zone had acquired the significance of feminine impulses of tenderness, and they retained it during the later illness as well.

At this point we must consider an objection, the discussion of which may contribute much to the elucidation of the apparent confusion of the circumstances. We have been driven to assume that during the process of the dream he understood that women are castrated, that instead of a male organ they have a wound which serves for sexual intercourse, and that castration is the necessary condition of femininity; we have been driven to assume that the threat of this loss induced him to repress his feminine attitude towards men, and that he awoke from his homosexual enthusiasm in anxiety. Now how can this comprehension of sexual intercourse, this recognition of the vagina, be brought into harmony with the selection of the bowel for the purpose of identification with women? Are not the intestinal symptoms based on what is probably an older notion, and one which in any case completely contradicts the dread of castration—the notion, namely, that sexual intercourse takes place at the anus?

To be sure, this contradiction is present; and the two views are entirely inconsistent with each other. The only question is whether they need be consistent. Our bewilderment arises

A conclusion which was probably not far from the truth.

---

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose

...ren erlebten Szene und Aufklärung über die Rolle der Frau beim Geschlechtsakt brachte. Es liegt nahe, auch die Wandlung in seinem Verhalten gegen die Defäkation mit dieser großen Umwälzung zusammenzubringen. Dyssenterie war ihm offenbar der Name der Krankheit, über die er die Mutter klagen gehört hatte, mit der man nicht leben könne; die Mutter galt ihm nicht als unterleibs-, sondern als darmkrank. Unter dem Einfluß der Urszene erschloß sich ihm der Zusammenhang, daß die Mutter durch das, was der Vater mit ihr vorgenommen, krank geworden sei, und seine Angst, Blut im Stuhle zu haben, ebenso krank zu sein wie die Mutter, war die Ablehnung der Identifizierung mit der Mutter in jener sexuellen Szene, dieselbe Ablehnung, mit der er aus dem Traum erwacht war. Die Angst war aber auch der Beweis, daß er in der späteren Bearbeitung der Urszene sich an die Stelle der Mutter gesetzt, ihr diese Beziehung zum Vater geneidet hatte. Das Organ, an dem sich die Identifizierung mit dem Weibe, die passiv homosexuelle Einstellung zum Manne äußern konnte, war die Analzone. Die Störungen in der Funktion dieser Zone hatten nun die Bedeutung von femininen Zärtlichkeitsregungen bekommen und behielten sie auch während der späteren Erkrankung bei.

An dieser Stelle müssen wir nun einen Einwand anhören, dessen Diskussion viel zur Klärung der scheinbar verworrenen Sachlage beitragen kann. Wir haben ja annehmen müssen, daß er während des Traumvorganges verstanden, das Weib sei kastriert, habe anstatt des männlichen Gliedes eine Wunde, die dem Geschlechtsverkehr diene, die Kastration sei die Bedingung der Weiblichkeit, und dieses drohende Verlustes wegen habe er die feminine Einstellung zum Manne verdrängt und sei mit Angst aus der homosexuellen Schwärmerie erwacht. Wie verträgt sich dies Verständnis des Geschlechtsverkehrs, diese Anerkennung der Vagina, mit der Auswahl des Darmes zur Identifizierung mit dem Weibe? Ruhren die Darmsymptome nicht auf der wahrscheinlich älteren, der Kastrationsangst voll widersprechenden Auffassung, daß der Darmausgang die Stelle des sexuellen Verkehrs sei?

Gewiß, dieser Widerspruch besteht, und die beiden Auffassungen tragen sich gar nicht miteinander. Die Frage ist nur, ob sie sich zu vertragen brauchen. Unser Befremden rührt

1 Siehe vorhin S. 163–64.
2 Wobei er ja wahrscheinlich nicht irren...
only because we are always inclined to treat unconscious mental processes like conscious ones and to forget the profound differences between the two psychological systems.

When his Christmas dream, with its excitement and expectancy, conjured up before him the picture of the sexual intercourse of his parents as it had once been observed (or construed) by him, there can be no doubt that the first view of it to come up was the old one, according to which the part of the female body which received the male organ was the anus. And, indeed, what else could he have supposed when at the age of one and a half he was a spectator of the scene? But now came the new event that occurred when he was four years old. What he had learnt in the meantime, the allusions which he had heard to castration, awoke and cast a doubt on the 'cloacal theory'; they brought to his notice the difference between the sexes and the sexual part played by women. In this contingency he behaved as children in general behave when they are given an unwished-for piece of information—whether sexual or of any other kind. He rejected what was new (in our case from motives connected with his fear of castration) and clung fast to what was old. He decided in favour of the intestine and against the vagina, just as, for similar motives, he later on took his father's side against God. He rejected the new information and clung to the old theory. The latter must have provided the material for his identification with women, which made its appearance later as a dread of death in connection with the bowels, and for his first religious scruples, about whether Christ had had a behind, and so on. It is not that his new insight remained without any effect; quite the reverse. It developed an extraordinarily powerful effect, for it became a motive for keeping the whole process of the dream under repression and for excluding it from being worked over later in consciousness. But with that its effect was exhausted; it had no influence in deciding the sexual problem. That it should have been possible from that time onwards for a fear of castration to exist side by side with an identification with women by means of the bowel admittedly involved a contradiction. But it was only a logical contradiction—which is not saying much. On the contrary, the whole process is characteristic of the way in which the unconscious works. A

1 Or so long as he did not grasp the sense of the copulation between the dogs.

1 Oder solange er den Koitus der Hunde nicht verstand.
repression is something very different from a condemning judgement.

When we were studying the genesis of the wolf phobia, we followed the effect of his new insight into the sexual act; but now that we are investigating the disturbances of the intestinal function, we find ourselves working on the basis of the old cloacal theory. The two points of view remained separated from each other by a stage of repression. His feminine attitude towards men, which had been repudiated by the act of repression, drew back, as it were, into the intestinal symptoms, and each intestinal pain, which were so frequent during the patient's childhood. His later sexual phantasies, which were based on them until we have explained the modifications which take place in the significance of faeces from the first years of childhood onward.¹

I have already hinted at an earlier point in my story [p. 38] that one portion of the content of the primal scene has been kept back. I am now in a position to produce this missing portion. The child finally interrupted his parents' intercourse by passing a stool, which gave him an excuse for screaming. All the considerations which I have raised above in discussing the rest of the content of the same scene apply equally to the criticism of this additional piece. The patient accepted this concluding act when I had constructed it, and appeared to confirm it by producing 'transitory symptoms'. A further additional piece which I had proposed, to the effect that his father was annoyed at the interruption and gave vent to his ill-humour by scolding him, had to be dropped. The material of the analysis did not react to it.

The additional detail which I have now brought forward cannot of course be put on a level with the rest of the content of the scene. Here it is not a question of an impression from outside, which must be expected to re-emerge in a number of later indications, but of a reaction on the part of the child himself. It would make no difference to the story as a whole if this

¹ Cf. 'On Transformations of Instinct as Exemplified in Anal Erotism' (1917z). [See below, p. 125. Though that paper was published before the present case history, it was probably written later.]

---

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose

Eine Verdrängung ist etwas anderes als eine Verwerfung.

Als wir die Genese der Wolfsphobie studierten, verfolgten wir die Wirkung der neuen Einsicht in den geschlechtlichen Akt; jetzt, wo wir die Störungen der Darmtätigkeit untersuchen, befinden wir uns auf dem Boden der alten Kloakentheorie. Die beiden Standpunkte bleiben durch eine Verdrängungsstufe voneinander getrennt. Die durch den Verdrängungsakt abgewiesene weibliche Einstellung zum Manne zieht sich gleichsam in die Darmsymptomatik zurück und äußert sich in den häufig auftretenden Diarrhöen, Obstipationen und Darmschmerzen der Kindjahre. Die späteren sexuellen Phantasien, die auf der Grundlage richtiger Sexualkenntnis aufgebaut sind, können sich nun in regressiver Weise als Darmschmerzen äußern. Wir verstehen dieselben aber nicht, ehe wir den Bedeutungswandel des Kotes seit den ersten Kindheitstagen aufgedeckt haben.¹


Das Detail, das ich jetzt hinzugefügt habe, darf natürlich mit dem anderen Inhalt der Szene nicht in eine Linie gestellt werden. Es handelt sich bei ihm nicht um einen Eindruck von außen, dessen Wiederkehr man in soviel späteren Zeichen zu erwarten hat, sondern um eine eigene Reaktion des Kindes. Es würde sich an der ganzen Geschichte nichts

¹ Vgl.: 'Über Triebumsetzungen', usw. [(1917 c). Diese Arbeit wurde zwar vor der hier abgedruckten Fallstudie veröffentlicht, aber wahrscheinlich nach ihr gedruckt.]
demonstration had not occurred, or if it had been taken from a later period and inserted into the course of the scene. But there can be no question of how we are to regard it. It is a sign of a state of excitement of the anal zone (in the widest sense). In other similar cases an observation like this of sexual intercourse has ended with a discharge of urine; a grown-up man in the same circumstances would feel an erection. The fact that our little boy passed a stool as a sign of his sexual excitement is to be regarded as a characteristic of his congenital sexual constitution. He at once assumed a passive attitude, and showed more inclination towards a subsequent identification with women than with men.

At the same time, like every other child, he was making use of the content of the intestines in one of its earliest and most primitive meanings. Faeces are the child’s first gift, the first sacrifice on behalf of his affection, a portion of his own body which he is ready to part with, but only for the sake of some one he loves.\(^1\) To use faeces as an expression of defiance, as our patient did against the governess when he was three and a half, is merely to turn this earlier ‘gift’ meaning into the negative.

The ‘grumus merdae’ [heap of faeces] left behind by criminals upon the scene of their misdeeds seems to have both these meanings: contumely, and a regressive expression of making amends. It is always possible, when a higher stage has been reached, for use still to be made of the lower one in its negative and debased sense. The contrariety is a manifestation of repression.\(^8\)

\(^1\) I believe there can be no difficulty in substantiating the statement that infants only soil with their excrement people whom they know and are fond of; they do not consider strangers worthy of such treatment. In my *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality* (1905d) [Standard Ed., 7, 185–7] I mentioned the very first purpose to which faeces are put—namely, the auto-erotic stimulation of the intestinal mucous membrane. We now reach a further stage, at which a decisive part in the process of defaecation is played by the child’s attitude to some object to whom he thus shows himself obedient or agreeable. This relation is one that persists; for even older children will only allow themselves to be assisted in defaecating and urinating by particular privileged persons, though in this connection the prospect of other forms of satisfaction is also involved.

\(^8\) In the unconscious, as we are aware, ‘No’ does not exist, and there is no distinction between contraries. Negation is only introduced by the process of repression. [See “The Unconscious” (1915e), Section V, and the later paper on ‘Negation’ (1925b).]
At a later stage of sexual development faeces take on the meaning of a baby. For babies, like faeces, are born through the anus. The 'gift' meaning of faeces readily admits of this transformation. It is a common usage to speak of a baby as a 'gift'. The more frequent expression is that the woman has 'given' the man a baby; but in the usage of the unconscious equal attention is justly paid to the other aspect of the relation, namely, to the woman having 'received' the baby as a gift from the man.

The meaning of faeces as money branches off from the 'gift' meaning in another direction.

The deeper significance of our patient's early screen memory, to the effect that he had his first fit of rage because he was not given enough presents one Christmas, is now revealed to us. What he was feeling was the want of was sexual satisfaction, which he had taken as being anal. His sexual researches came during the course of the dream to understand what they had been prepared for finding before the dream, namely, that the sexual act solved the problem of the origin of babies. Even before the dream he had disliked babies. Once, when he had come upon a small unfledged bird that had fallen out of its nest, he had taken it for a human baby and been horrified at it. The analysis showed that all small animals, such as caterpillars and insects, that he had been so enraged with, had had the meaning of babies to him. His position in regard to his elder sister had given him every opportunity for reflecting upon the relation between elder and younger children. His Nanya had once told him that his mother was so fond of him because he was the youngest, and this gave him good grounds for wishing that no younger child might come after him. His dread of this youngest child was revived under the influence of the dream which brought up before him his parents' intercourse.

To the sexual currents that are already known to us we must therefore add a further one, which, like the rest, started from the primal scene reproduced in the dream. In his identification with women (that is, with his mother) he was ready to give his father a baby, and was jealous of his mother, who had already done so and would perhaps do so again.

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose


Die Geldbedeutung des Kotes zweigt nach einer anderen Richtung von der Geschenkbedeutung ab.

Die frühe Deckeninnerung unseres Kranken, daß er einen ersten Wutanfall produziert, weil er zu Weihnachten nicht genug Geschenke bekommen habe, enthüllt nun ihren tieferen Sinn. Was er vermißte, war die Sexualbefriedigung, die er anal gefaßt hatte. Seine Sexualforschung war vor dem Traum darauf vorbereitet und hatte es während des Traumvorganges begriffen, daß der Sexualakt das Rätsel der Herkunft der kleinen Kinder löse. Er hatte die kleinen Kinder schon vor dem Traum nicht gemocht. Einmal fand er einen kleinen, noch nackten Vogel, der aus dem Nest gefallen war, hielt ihn für einen kleinen Menschen und grauste sich vor ihm. Die Analyse wies nach, daß all die kleinen Tiere, Raupen, Insekten, gegen die er wütete, ihm kleine Kinder bedeutet hatten. Sein Verhältnis zur älteren Schwester hatte ihm Anlaß gegeben, viel über die Beziehung der älteren Kinder zu den jüngeren nachzudenken; als ihm die Nanja einmal gesagt hatte, die Mutter habe ihn so lieb, weil er der jüngste sei, hatte er ein begleiliches Motiv bekommen zu wünschen, daß ihm kein jüngeres Kind nachfolgen möge. Die Angst vor diesem jüngsten wurde dann unter dem Einfluß des Traumes, der ihm den Verkehr der Eltern vorführte, neu belebt.

Wir sollen also zu den uns bereits bekannten eine neue Sexualströmung hinzufügen, die wie die anderen von der im Traum reproduzierten Urszene ausgeht. In der Identifizierung mit dem Weibe (der Mutter) ist er bereit, dem Vater ein Kind zu schenken, und eifersüchtig auf die Mutter, die das schon getan hat und vielleicht wieder tun wird.

1 Ebenso das Ungeziefer, das in Träumen und Phobien häufig für die kleinen Kinder steht.
In a roundabout way, since both ‘money’ and ‘baby’ have the sense of ‘gift’, money can take over the meaning of baby and can thus become the means of expressing feminine (homosexual) satisfaction. This was what occurred with our patient when—he and his sister were staying at a German sanatorium at the time—he saw his father give his sister two large bank notes. In imagination he had always had suspicions of his father’s relations with his sister; and at this his jealousy awoke. He rushed at his sister as soon as they were alone, and demanded a share of the money with so much vehemence and such reproaches that his sister, in tears, threw him the whole of it.

What had excited him was not merely the actual money, but rather the ‘baby’—anal sexual satisfaction from his father. And he was able to console himself with this when, in his father’s lifetime, his sister died. The revolting thought which occurred to him when he heard the news of her death [p. 73] in fact meant no more than this: ‘Now I am the only child. Now Father will have to love me only.’ But though his reflection was in itself perfectly capable of becoming conscious, yet its homosexual background was so intolerable that it was possible for its disguise in the shape of the most sordid avarice to come as a great relief.

Similarly, too, when after his father’s death he reproached his mother so unjustifiably with wanting to cheat him out of the money and with being fonder of the money than of him [p. 73 f.]. His old jealousy of her for having loved another child besides him, the possibility of her having wanted another child after him, drove him into making charges which he himself knew were unwarranted.

This analysis of the meaning of faeces makes it clear that the obsessive thoughts which obliged him to connect God with faeces had a further significance beyond the disparagement which he saw in them himself. They were in fact true compromise-products, in which a part was played no less by an affectionate current of devotion than by a hostile current of abuse. ‘God—shit’ was probably an abbreviation for an offering that one occasionally hearing mentioned in its unabridged form. ‘Shitting on God’ ['auf Gott scheissen'] or ‘shitting something for God’ ['Gott etwas scheissen'] also means giving him a baby or getting him to give one a baby. The old ‘gift’ meaning in its negative and debased form and the ‘baby’ meaning that

Analerotik und Kastrationskomplex


Ahnlich wenn er nach dem Tode des Vaters der Mutter jene ungerechten Vorwürfe machte, daß sie ihn ums Geld betrügen wolle, daß sie das Geld lieber habe als ihn [S. 189]. Die alte Eifersucht, daß sie noch ein anderes Kind als ihn geliebt, die Möglichkeit, daß sie sich noch nach ihm ein anderes Kind gewünscht, zwangen ihn zu Beschuldigungen, deren Haltlosigkeit er selbst erkannte.

Durch diese Analyse der Kotbedeutung wird uns nun klar gelegt, daß die Zwangsgedanken, die Gott in Verbindung mit Kot bringen mußten, noch etwas anderes bedeuteten als die Schmähung, für die er sie erkannte. Sie waren vielmehr echte Kompromißergebnisse, an denen eine zärtliche, hingehende Strömung ebenso Anteil hatte wie eine feindselig beschimpfende. »Gott — Kot« war wahrscheinlich eine Abkürzung für ein Anerbieten, wie man es im Leben auch in ungekürzter Form zu hören bekommt. »Auf Gott scheißen«, »Gott etwas scheißen« heißt auch, ihm ein Kind schenken, sich von ihm ein Kind schenken lassen. Die alte negativ erniedrigte Geschenkbedeutung und die später aus ihr
AN INFANTILE NEUROSIS

was later developed from it are combined with each other in
the obsessional phrase. In the latter of these meanings a feminine
tenderness finds expression: a readiness to give up one's mas-
culinity if in exchange for it one can be loved like a woman.
Here, then, we have precisely the same impulse towards God
which was expressed in unambiguous words in the delusional
system of the paranoic Senatspräsident Schreber [Freud, 1911c, end of Section I].

When later on I come to describing the final clearing up of
my patient's symptoms, the way in which the intestinal disorder
had put itself at the service of the homosexual current and had
given expression to his feminine attitude towards his father will
once again become evident. Meanwhile we shall mention
a further meaning of faeces, which will lead us on to a discussion
of the castration complex.

Since the column of faeces stimulates the erotogenic mucous
membrane of the bowel, it plays the part of an active organ in
regard to it; it behaves just as the penis does to the vaginal
mucous membrane, and acts as it were as its forerunner during
the cloacal epoch. The handing over of faeces for the sake of
(out of love for) some one else becomes a prototype of castration;
it is the first occasion upon which an individual parts with a
piece of his own body1 in order to gain the favour of some other
person whom he loves. So that a person's love of his own penis,
which is in other respects narcissistic, is not without an element
of anal erotism. 'Faeces', 'baby' and 'penis' thus form a unity,
an unconscious concept (sit venia verbo)—the concept, namely,
of 'a little one' that can become separated from one's body.
Along these paths of association the libidinal cathexis may
become displaced or intensified in ways which are pathologically
important and which are revealed by analysis.

We are already acquainted with the attitude which our
patient first adopted to the problem of castration. He rejected
castration, and held to his theory of intercourse by the anus.
When I speak of his having rejected it, the first meaning of the
phrase is that he would have nothing to do with it, in the sense
of having repressed it. This really involved no judgement upon
the question of its existence, but it was the same as if it did not
exist. Such an attitude, however, could not have been his final
one, even at the time of his infantile neurosis. We find good

1 It is as such that faeces are invariably treated by children.

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose

entwickelte Kindbedeutung sind in den Zwangsworten miteinander ver-
einigt. In der letzteren kommt eine feminine Zärtlichkeit zum Aus-
druck, die Bereitwilligkeit, auf seine Männlichkeit zu verzichten, wenn
man dafür als Weib geliebt werden kann. Also gerade jene Regung gegen
Gott, die in dem Wahnsystem des paranoischen Senatspräsidenten
Schreber1 in unzweideutigen Worten ausgesprochen wird.

Wenn ich später von der letzten Symptomlösung bei meinem Patienten
berichten werde, wird sich noch einmal zeigen lassen, wie die Darm-
störung sich in den Dienst der homosexuellen Stromung gestellt und die
feminine Einstellung zum Vater ausgedrückt hatte. Eine neue Bedeutung
des Kotes soll uns jetzt den Weg zur Besprechung des Kastrationskom-
plexes bahnen.

Indem die Kotsäule die erogene Darmschleimhaut reizt, spielt sie die
Rolle eines aktiven Organs für dieselbe, benimmt sie sich wie der Penis
gegen die Vaginalschleimhaut und wird gleichsam zum Vorläufer des
der Analerotik. Der Kot, das Kind, der Penis ergeben also eine Einheit, einen unbewussten Begriff — sit venia verbo —, den des vom Körper
abtrennbaren Kleinen. Auf diesen Verbindungswegen können sich Verschiebungen und Verstärkungen der Libidobesetzung vollziehen,
die für die Pathologie von Bedeutung sind und von der Analyse
aufgedeckt werden.

Die anfängliche Stellungnahme unseres Patienten gegen das Problem der
Kastration ist uns bekannt geworden. Er verworf sie und blieb auf dem
Standpunkt des Verkehrs im After. Wenn ich gesagt habe, daß er sie
verwarf, so ist die nächste Bedeutung dieses Ausdrucks, daß er von ihr
nichts wissen wollte im Sinne der Verdrängung. Damit war eigentlich
kein Urteils über ihre Existenz gefällt, aber es war so gut, als ob sie nicht
existierte. Diese Einstellung kann aber nicht die definitive, nicht einmal
für die Jahre seiner Kindheitsneurose geblieben sein. Späterhin finden
† [Freud, 1911c, Ende des Abschnitts I]
‡ Als welches der Kot durchaus vom Kinde behandelt wird.

198
subsequent evidence of his having recognized castration as a fact. In this connection, once again, he behaved in the manner which was so characteristic of him, but which makes it so difficult to give a clear account of his mental processes or to feel one's way into them. First he resisted and then he yielded; but the second reaction did not do away with the first. In the end there were to be found in him two contrary currents side by side, of which one abominated the idea of castration, while the other was prepared to accept it and console itself with feminity as a compensation. But beyond any doubt a third current, the oldest and deepest, which did not as yet even raise the question of the reality of castration, was still capable of coming into activity. I have elsewhere reported a hallucination which this same patient had at the age of five and upon which I need only add a brief commentary here.

"When I was five years old, I was playing in the garden near my nurse, and was carving with my pocket-knife in the bark of one of the walnut-trees that come into my dream as well. Suddenly, to my unspeakable terror, I noticed that I had cut through the little finger of (right or left?) hand, so that it was only hanging on by its skin. I felt no pain, but great fear. I did not venture to say anything to my nurse, who was only a few paces distant, but I sank down on the nearest seat and sat there incapable of casting another glance at my finger. At last I calmed down, took a look at the finger, and saw that it was entirely uninjured."

After he had received his instruction in the Bible story at the age of four and a half he began, as we know, to make the intense effort of thought which ended in his obsessional piety. We may therefore assume that this hallucination belongs to the period in which he brought himself to recognize the reality of castration and it is perhaps to be regarded as actually marking this step. Even the small correction [see footnote] made by the patient is not without interest. If he had a hallucination of the same

---

1 "Fausse reconnaissance ("Déjà Raconté")" in Psycho-Analytic Treatment' (1914a), [Standard Ed., 13, 204 f.]
2 "The Occurrence in Dreams of Material from Fairy Tales" [1913d]. In telling the story again on a later occasion he made the following correction: "I don't believe I was cutting the tree. That was a confusion with another recollection, which must also have been hallucinatory falsified, of having made a cut in a tree with my knife and of blood having come out of the tree."

---

Analerotik und Kastrationskomplex

sich gute Beweise dafür, daß er die Kastration als Tatsache anerkannt hatte. Er hatte sich auch in diesem Punkte benommen, wie es für sein Wesen kennzeichnend war, was uns allerdings die Darstellung wie die Einfühlung so außerordentlich erschwert. Er hatte sich zuerst gesträubt und dann nachgeben, aber die eine Reaktion hatte die andere nicht aufgehoben. Am Ende bestanden bei ihm zwei gegenständliche Strömungen nebeneinander, von denen die eine die Kastration verabscheute, die andere bereit war, sie anzunehmen und sich mit der Weiblichkeit als Ersatz zu trösten. Die dritte, älteste und tiefste, welche die Kastration einfach verworfen hatte, wobei das Urteil über ihre Realität noch nicht in Frage kam, war gewiß auch noch aktivierbar. Ich habe von eben diesem Patienten an anderer Stelle eine Halluzination aus seinem fünften Jahr erzählt, zu der ich hier nur einen kurzen Kommentar hinzuzufügen habe:


Wir wissen, daß mit 4½ Jahren nach der Mitteilung der heiligen Geschichte bei ihm jene intensive Denkarbeit einsetzte, die in die Zwangsfähigkeit auslief. Wir dürfen also annehmen, daß diese Halluzination in die Zeit fällt, in der er sich zur Anerkennung der Realität der Kastration entschloß, und daß sie vielleicht gerade diesen Schritt markieren sollte. Auch die kleine Korrektur [s. letzte Anm.] des Patienten ist nicht ohne Interesse. Wenn er dasselbe schaurige Erlebnis hallucinierte,
dreadful experience which Tasso, in his *Gerusalemme Liberata*, tells of his hero Tancred, we shall perhaps be justified in reaching the interpretation that the tree meant a woman to my little patient as well. Here, then, he was playing the part of his father, and was connecting his mother's familiar haemorrhages with the castration of women, which he now recognized,—with the 'wound'.

His hallucination of the severed finger was instigated, as he reported later on, by the story that a female relation of his had been born with six toes and that the extra one had immediately afterwards been chopped off with an axe. Women, then, had no penis because it was taken away from them at birth. In this manner he came, at the period of the obsessional neurosis, to accept what he had already learned during the dream but had at the time rejected by repression. He must also have become acquainted, during the readings and discussions of the sacred story, with the ritual circumcision of Christ and of the Jews in general.

There is no doubt whatever that at this time his father was turning into the terrifying figure that threatened him with castration. The cruel God with whom he was then struggling—who made men sinful, only to punish them afterwards, who sacrificed his own son and the sons of men—this God threw back his character on to the patient's father, though, on the other hand, the boy was at the same time trying to defend his father against the God. At this point the boy had to fit into the phylegetic pattern, and he did so, although his personal experiences may not have agreed with it. Although the threats or hints of castration which had come his way had emanated from women, this could not hold up the final result for long. In spite of everything it was his father from whom in the end he came to fear castration. In this respect heredity triumphed over accidental experience; in man's prehistory it was unquestionably the father who practised castration as a punishment and who later softened it down into circumcision. The further...

3 [The soul of Tancred's beloved Clorinda was imprisoned in a tree; and when, in ignorance of this, he slashed at it with his sword, blood flowed from the cut. This story is told by Freud at greater length in connection with the 'compulsion to repeat' in Chapter III of *Beyond the Pleasure Principle* (1920), *Standard Ed.*, 18, 22.]

8 We already know this as regards his Nanya, and we shall hear of it again in connection with another woman.

**Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose**

Das Tasso im »Befreiten Jerusalem« von seinem Helden Tancred berichtet, so ist wohl die Deutung gerechtfertigt, daß auch für meinen kleinen Patienten der Baum ein Eindruck bedeutete. Er spielte also dabei den Vater und brachte die ihm bekannten Blutungen der Mutter mit der von ihm erkannten Kastration der Frauen, »der Wunde«, in Beziehung.

Die Anregung zur Halluzination vom abgeschnittenen Finger gab ihm, wie er später berichtete, die Erzählung, daß einer Verwandten, die mit sechs Zehen geboren wurde, dieses überzählige Glied gleich nachher mit einem Beil abgehackt wurde. Die Frauen hatten also keinen Penis, weil er ihnen bei der Geburt abgenommen worden war. Auf diesem Wege akzeptierte er zur Zeit der Zwangsneurose, was er schon während des Traumvorganges erfahren und damals durch Verdrängung von sich gewiesen hatte. Auch die rituelle Beschneidung Christi, wie der Juden überhaupt, konnte ihm während der Lektüre der heiligen Geschichte und der Gespräche über sie nicht unbekannt bleiben.

Es ist ganz unzweifelhaft, daß ihm um diese Zeit der Vater zu jener Schreckenspersön wurde, von der die Kastration droht. Der grausame Gott, mit dem er damals rang, der die Menschen schuldig werden läßt, um sie dann zu bestrafen, der seinen Sohn und die Söhne der Menschen opfert, warf seinen Charakter auf den Vater zurück, den er anderseits gegen diesen Gott zu verteidigen suchte. Der Knabe hat hier ein phylogenetisches Schema zu erfüllen und bringt es zustande, wenngleich seine persönlichen Erlebnisse nicht dazu stimmen mögen. Die Kastrationsdrohungen oder Andeutungen, die er erfahren hatte, waren vielmehr von Frauen ausgegangen, aber das konnte das Endergebnis nicht für lange aufhalten. Am Ende wurde es doch der Vater, von dem er die Kastration befürchtete. In diesem Punkte siegte die Heredität über das akzidentelle Erleben; in der Vorgeschichte der Menschheit ist es gewiß der Vater gewesen, der die Kastration als Strafe übte und sie dann zur Beschneidung ermaßigte. Je weiter...

3 *Gerusalemme Liberata.* Die Seele der von Tancred geliebten Clorinda war in einen Baum gebannt. Als er in Unkenntnis dieses Schicksals einen Hieb mit dem Schwert gegen den Stamm führt, fließt Blut aus der Kerbe.

8 Wir wissen es von der Nanya und werden es von einer anderen Frau noch erfahren.
(VII) ANAL EROTISM AND CASTRATION

87

the patient went in repressing sensuality during the course of the development of the obsessional neurosis, the more natural it must have become to him to attribute these evil intentions to his father, who was the true representative of sensual activity.

His identification of his father with the castrator became important as being the source of an intense unconscious hostility towards him (which reached the pitch of a death-wish) and of a sense of guilt which reacted against it. Up to this point, however, he was behaving normally—that is to say, like every neurotic who is possessed by a positive Oedipus complex. But the astonishing thing was that even against this there was a counter-current working in him, which, on the contrary, regarded his father as the one who had been castrated and as calling, therefore, for his sympathy.

When I analysed his ceremonial of breathing out whenever he saw cripples, beggars, and such people, I was able to show that that symptom could also be traced back to his father, whom he had felt sorry for when he visited him as a patient in the sanatorium [p. 67]. The analysis made it possible to follow this thread even further back. At a very early period, probably before his seduction (at the age of three and a quarter), there had been on the estate an old day-labourer whose business it was to carry the water into the house. He could not speak, ostensibly because his tongue had been cut out. (He was probably a deaf mute.) The little boy was very fond of him and pitied him deeply. When he died, he looked for him in the sky. Here, then, was the first of the cripples for whom he had felt sympathy, and, as was shown by the context and the point at which

1 For evidence of this see pp. 67–8.
2 Among the most tormenting, though at the same time the most grotesque, symptoms of his later illness was his relation to every tailor from whom he ordered a suit of clothes: his deference and timidity in the presence of this high functionary, his attempts to get into his good books by giving him extravagant tips, and his despair over the results of the work however it might in fact have turned out. [The German word for 'tailor' is 'Schneider', from the verb 'schneiden' ('to cut'), a compound of which, 'beschneiden', means 'to circumcise'. It will be remembered, too, that it was a tailor who pulled off the wolf's tail (pp. 30–1).]
3 In this connection I may mention some dreams which he had, later than the anxiety-dream, but while he was still on the first estate. These dreams represented the scene of coition as an event taking place between heavenly bodies.

Analerotik und Kastrationskomplex


1 Siehe die Belege dafür S. 184.
2 Zu dem quälendsten, aber auch grotesksten Symptomen seines späteren Leidens gehörte sein Verhältnis zu jedem - Schneider, bei dem er ein Kleidungsstück bestellt hatte, sein Respekt und seine Schüchternheit vor dieser hohen Person, seine Versuche, sie durch unnötige Trinkgelder für sich einzunehmen, und seine Verzweiflung über den Erfolg der Arbeit, wie immer sie ausgefallen sein mochte. [Man erinnere sich, daß es ein Schneider war, der dem Wolf den Schwan ausriß (S. 151).]
3 Ich erwähne in diesem Zusammenhange Träume, die später als der Angsttraum, aber noch auf dem ersten Gut vorfanden und die Koituszene als Vorgang zwischen Himmelskörpern darstellten.
the episode came out in the analysis, an undoubted father-surrogate.

In the analysis this man was associated with the recollection of other servants whom the patient had liked and about whom he emphasized the fact that they had been either sickly or Jews (which implied circumcision). The footman, too, who had helped to clean him after his accident at four and a half [p. 76], had been a Jew and a consumptive and had been an object of his compassion. All of these figures belong to the period before his visit to his father at the sanatorium, that is, before the formation of the symptom; the latter must therefore rather have been intended to ward off (by means of the breathing out) any identification with the object of the patient's pity. Then suddenly, in connection with a dream, the analysis plunged back into the prehistoric period, and led him to assert that during the copulation in the primal scene he had observed the penis disappear, that he had felt compassion for his father on that account, and had rejoiced at the reappearance of what he thought had been lost. So here was a fresh emotional impulse, starting once again from the primal scene. Moreover, the narcissistic origin of compassion (which is confirmed by the word itself)\(^1\) is here quite unmistakably revealed.

\(^1\) [German 'Mitleid', literally 'suffering with'.]
FRESH MATERIAL FROM THE PRIMAL PERIOD—SOLUTION

It happens in many analyses that as one approaches their end new recollections emerge which have hitherto been kept carefully concealed. Or it may be that on one occasion some unpretentious remark is thrown out in an indifferent tone of voice as though it were superfluous; that then, on another occasion, something further is added, which begins to make the physician prick his ears; and that at last he comes to recognize this despised fragment of a memory as the key to the weightiest secrets that the patient's neurosis has veiled.

Early in the analysis my patient had told me of a memory of the period in which his naughtiness had been in the habit of suddenly turning into anxiety. He was chasing a beautiful big butterfly with yellow stripes and large wings which ended in pointed projections—a swallow-tail, in fact [see p. 16]. Suddenly, when the butterfly had settled on a flower, he was seized with a dreadful fear of the creature, and ran away screaming.

This memory recurred occasionally during the analysis, and called for an explanation; but for a long time none was to be found. Nevertheless it was to be assumed as a matter of course that a detail like this had not kept its place in his recollection on its own account, but that it was a screen-memory, representing something of more importance with which it was in some way connected. One day he told me that in his language a butterfly was called 'babushka', 'granny'. He added that in general butterflies had seemed to him like women and girls, and beetles and caterpillars like boys. So there could be little doubt that in this anxiety scene a recollection of some female person had been aroused. I will not hide the fact that at that time I put forward the possibility that the yellow stripes on the butterfly had reminded him of similar stripes on a piece of clothing worn by some woman. I only mention this as an illustration to show how inadequate the physician's constructive efforts usually are for clearing up questions that arise, and how
unjust it is to attribute the results of analysis to the physician’s imagination and suggestion.

Many months later, in quite another connection, the patient remarked that the opening and shutting of the butterfly’s wings while it was settled on the flower had given him an uncanny feeling. It had looked, so he said, like a woman opening her legs, and the legs then made the shape of a Roman V, which, as we know, was the hour at which, in his boyhood, and even up to the time of the treatment, he used to fall into a depressed state of mind [p. 37].

This was an association which I could never have arrived at myself, and which gained importance from a consideration of the thoroughly infantile nature of the train of association which it revealed. The attention of children, as I have often noticed, is attracted far more readily by movements than by forms at rest; and they frequently base associations upon a similarity of movement which is overlooked or neglected by adults.

After this the little problem was once more left untouched for a long time; but I may mention the facile suspicion that the points or stick-like projections of the butterfly’s wings might have had the meaning of genital symbols.

One day there emerged, timidly and indistinctly, a kind of recollection that at a very early age, even before the time of the nurse, he must have had a nursery-maid who was very fond of him. Her name had been the same as his mother’s. He had no doubt returned her affection. It was, in fact, a first love that had faded into oblivion. But we agreed that something must have occurred at that time that became of importance later on.

Then on another occasion he emended this recollection. She could not have had the same name as his mother; that had been a mistake on his part, and it showed, of course, that in his memory she had become fused with his mother. Her real name, he went on, had occurred to him in a roundabout way. He had suddenly thought of a store-room, on the first estate, in which fruit was kept after it had been picked, and of a particular sort of pear with a most delicious taste—a big pear with yellow stripes on its skin. The word for ‘pear’ in his language was ‘gruscha’, and that had also been the name of the nursery-maid.

It thus became clear that behind the screen memory of the hunted butterfly the memory of the nursery-maid lay concealed.

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose

die Phantasie und die Suggestion des Arztes für die Ergebnisse der Analyse verantwortlich zu machen.

In einem ganz anderen Zusammenhange, viele Monate später, machte dann der Patient die Bemerkung, das Öffnen und Schließen der Flügel, als der Schmetterling saß, hätte den unmheimlichen Eindruck auf ihn gemacht. Dies wäre so gewesen, wie wenn eine Frau die Beine öffnet, und die Beine ergäben dann die Figur einer römischen V, bekanntlich die Stunde, um welche schon in seinen Knabenjahren, aber auch jetzt noch, eine Verdüsterung seiner Stimmung einzutreten pflegte [S. 156].

Das war ein Einfall, auf den ich nie gekommen wäre, dessen Schätzung aber durch die Erwägung gewann, daß der darin bloßgelegte Assoziationsvorgang so recht infantilen Charakter hatte. Die Aufmerksamkeit der Kinder, habe ich oft bemerkt, wird durch Bewegungen weit mehr angezogen als durch ruhende Formen, und sie stellen oft Assoziationen auf Grund von ähnlicher Bewegung her, die von uns Erwachsenen nachlässig oder unterlassen werden.

Dann ruhte das kleine Problem wieder für lange Zeit. Ich will noch die wohlfeile Vermutung erwähnen, daß die spitzen oder stangenartigen Fortsätze der Schmetterlingsflügel eine Bedeutung als Genitalsymbole gehabt haben könnten.

Eines Tages tauchte schüchtern und undeutlich eine Art von Erinnerung auf, es müßte sehr früh, noch vor der Kinderfrau, ein Kindermädchen gegeben haben, das ihn sehr lieb hatte. Sie hatte denselben Namen wie die Mutter. Gewiß erwiderte er ihre Zärtlichkeit. Also eine verschollene erste Liebe. Wir einigten uns aber, irgend etwas müßte da vorgefallen sein, was später von Wichtigkeit wurde.

Dann korrigierte er ein anderes Mal seine Erinnerung. Sie könne nicht so geheißen haben wie die Mutter, das war ein Irrtum von ihm, der natürlich bewies, daß sie ihm in der Erinnerung mit der Mutter zusammengekommen war. Ihr richtiger Name sei ihm auch auf einem Umwege eingefallen. Er habe plötzlich an einen Lagerraum auf dem ersten Gute denken müssen, in dem das abgenommene Obst aufbewahrt wurde, und an eine gewisse Sorte Birnen von ausgezeichnetem Geschmack, große Birnen mit gelben Streifen auf ihrer Schale. Birne heißt in seiner Sprache Gruscha, und dies war auch der Name des Kindermädchens.

Also wurde es klar, daß sich hinter der Deckerinnerung des gejagten Schmetterlings das Gedächtnis des Kindermädchens verbarg. Die gelben
But the yellow stripes were not on her dress, but on the pear whose name was the same as hers. What, however, was the origin of the anxiety which had arisen when the memory of her had been activated? The obvious answer to this might have been the crude hypothesis that it had been this girl whom, when he was a small child, he had first seen making the movements with her legs which he had fixed in his mind with the Roman V—movements which allow access to the genitals. We spared ourselves such theorizing as this and waited for more material.

Very soon after this there came the recollection of a scene, incomplete, but, so far as it was preserved, definite. Grusha was kneeling on the floor, and beside her a pail and a short broom made of a bundle of twigs; he was also there, and she was teasing him or scolding him.

The missing elements could easily be supplied from other directions. During the first months of the treatment he had told me of how he had suddenly fallen in love in a compulsive manner with a peasant girl from whom, in his eighteenth year, he had contracted the precipitating cause of his later illness. When he told me this he had displayed a most extraordinary unwillingness to give me the girl’s name. It was an entirely isolated instance of resistance, for apart from it he obeyed the fundamental rule of analysis unreservedly. He asserted, however, that the reason for his being so much ashamed of mentioning the name was that it was a purely peasant name and that no girl of gentle birth could possibly be called by it. When eventually the name was produced, it turned out to be Matrona, which has a motherly ring about it. The shame was evidently displaced. He was not ashamed of the fact that these love-affairs were invariably concerned with girls of the humblest origin; he was ashamed only of the name. If it should turn out that the affair with Matrona had something in common with the Grusha scene, then the shame would have to be transferred back to that early episode.

He had told me another time that when he heard the story of John Huss he had been greatly moved, and that his attention had been held by the bundles of firewood that were dragged up when he was burnt at the stake. Now his sympathy for Huss created a perfectly definite suspicion in my mind, for I have

\[1\] [A gonorrhoeal infection. Cf. p. 7.]

\[2\] [A gonorrhoeal infection, vgl. S. 129 oben.]
often come upon this sympathy in youthful patients and I have always been able to explain it in the same way. One such patient even went so far as to produce a dramatized version of Huss's career; he began to write his play on the day on which he lost the object with whom he was secretly in love. Huss perished by fire, and (like others who possess the same qualification) he becomes the hero of people who have at one time suffered from enuresis. My patient himself connected the bundles of firewood used for the execution of Huss with the nursery-maid's broom or bundle of twigs.

This material fitted together spontaneously and served to fill in the gaps in the patient's memory of the scene with Grusha. When he saw the girl scrubbing the floor he had micrturated in the room and she had rejoined, no doubt jokingly, with a threat of castration.1

I do not know if my readers will have already guessed why it is that I have given such a detailed account of this episode from the patient's early childhood.2 It provides an important link between the primal scene and the later compulsive love [p. 41] which came to be of such decisive significance in his subsequent career, and it further shows us a condition upon which his falling in love depended and which elucidates that compulsion.

When he saw the girl on the floor engaged in scrubbing it, and kneeling down, with her buttocks projecting and her back horizontal, he was faced once again with the posture which his mother had assumed in the copulation scene. She became

1 It is very remarkable that the reaction of shame should be so intimately connected with involuntary emptying of the bladder (whether in the day-time or at night) and not equally so, as one would have expected, with incontinence of the bowels. Experience leaves no room for doubt upon the point. The regular relation that is found to exist between incontinence of the bladder and fire also provides matter for reflection. It is possible that these reactions and relations represent precipitates from the history of human civilization derived from a lower stratum than anything that is preserved for us in the traces surviving in myths or folklore. [Freud had discussed the connection between enuresis and dreaming of fire in his case history of 'Dora' (1905e), Standard Ed., 7, 71-2. He returned to the subject in a footnote in Chapter III of Civilization and Its Discontents (1930a) and later devoted a paper to it (1932a).]

2 Es ist sehr merkwürdig, daß die Reaktion der Beschämung so innig mit der unfreiwilligen (täglichen wie nächtlichen) Harntentleerung verbunden ist und nicht, wie man erwartet sollte, ebenso mit der Stuhlinkontinenz. Die Erfahrung läßt hierüber gar keinen Zweifel bestehen. Auch die regelmäßige Beziehung der Harninkontinenz zum Feuer gibt zu denken. Es ist möglich, daß in diesen Reaktionen und Zusammenhängen Niederlagen aus der Kulturgeschichte der Menschheit vorliegen, die tiefer hinabreichen als alles, was uns durch seine Spuren im Mythus und im Folklore erhalten ist. [Ober die Beziehung zwischen Enuresis und Feuer s. eine späte Arbeit Freuds (1932a).]

Als er das Mädchen auf dem Boden liegen sah, mit dem Aufwaschen desselben beschäftigt, kniend, die Nates vorgestreckt, den Rücken horizontal gehalten, fand er an ihr die Stellung wieder, welche die Mutter in der Koituszene eingenommen hatte. Sie wurde ihm zur Mutter, die

1 Sie fällt etwa in die Zeit um 2 1/2 Jahre, zwischen der angeblichen Koitusbeobachtung und der Verführung.
his mother to him; he was seized with sexual excitement owing to the activation of this picture; and, like his father (whose action he can only have regarded at the time as micturition), he behaved in a masculine way towards her. His micturition on the floor was in reality an attempt at a seduction, and the girl replied to it with a threat of castration, just as though she had understood what he meant.

The compulsion which proceeded from the primal scene was transferred on to this scene with Grusha and was carried forward by it. But the condition upon which his falling in love depended underwent a change which showed the influence of the second scene: it was transferred from the woman's posture to the occupation on which she was engaged while in that posture. This was clear, for instance, in the episode of Matrona. He was walking through the village which formed part of their (later) estate [cf. p. 15], when he saw a peasant girl kneeling by the pond and employed in washing clothes in it. He fell in love with the girl instantly and with irresistible violence, although he had not yet been able to get even a glimpse of her face. By her posture and occupation she had taken the place of Grusha for him. We can now see how it was that the shame which properly related to the content of the scene with Grusha could become attached to the name of Matrona.

Another attack of falling in love, dating from a few years earlier, shows even more clearly the compelling influence of the Grusha scene. A young peasant girl, who was a servant in the house, had long attracted him, but he succeeded in keeping himself from approaching her. One day, when he came upon her in a room by herself, he was overwhelmed by his love. He found her kneeling on the floor and engaged in scrubbing it, with a pail and a broom beside her—in fact, exactly as he had seen the girl in his childhood.

Even his final choice of object, which played such an important part in his life, is shown by its details (though they cannot be adduced here) to have been dependent upon the same condition and to have been an offshoot of the compulsion which, starting from the primal scene and going on to the scene with Grusha, had dominated his love-choice. I have remarked on an earlier page that I recognize in the patient an endeavour to debase his love-object. This is to be explained as

\[1\] This was before the dream.

sexuelle Erregung infolge der Aktivierung jenes Bildes\(^1\) ergriff ihn, und er benahm sich männlich gegen sie wie der Vater, dessen Aktion er damals ja nur als ein Urinieren verstanden haben konnte. Sein auf den Boden Urinieren war eigentlich ein Verführungsversuch, und das Mädchen antwortete darauf mit einer Kastrationsdrohung, als ob sie ihn verstanden hätte.


Selbst seine definitive Objektwahl, die für sein Leben so bedeutungsvoll wurde, erweist sich durch ihre näheren Umstände, die hier nicht anzuführen sind, als abhängig von der gleichen Liebesbedingung, als ein Ausläufer des Zwanges, der von der Urszene aus über die Szene mit Gruschaschaft eine Liebeswahl beherrschte. Ich habe an früherer Stelle bemerkt, daß ich das Bestreben zur Erniedrigung des Liebesobjekts bei dem Patienten wohl anerkenne. Es ist auf Reaktion gegen den Druck
a reaction against pressure from the sister who was so much his superior. But I promised at the same time (see pp. 22–3) to show that this self-assertive motive was not the only determinant, but that it concealed another and deeper one based on purely erotic motives. These were brought to light by the patient's memory of the nursery-maid scrubbing the floor—physically debased too, by the by. All his later love-objects were surrogates for this one person, who through the accident of her attitude had herself become his first mother-surrogate. The patient's first association in connection with the problem of his fear of the butterfly can now easily be explained retrospectively as a distant allusion to the primal scene (the hour of five). He confirmed the connection between the Grusha scene and the threat of castration by a particularly ingenious dream, which he himself succeeded in deciphering. 'I had a dream,' he said, 'of a man tearing off the wings of an Espe.' 'Espe?' I asked; 'what do you mean by that?' 'You know; that insect with yellow stripes on its body, that stings.' I could now put him right: 'So what you mean is a Wespe [wasp].' 'Is it called a Wespe?' I really thought it was called an Espe.' (Like so many other people, he used his difficulties with a foreign language as a screen for symptomatic acts.) 'But Espe, why, that's myself: S. P. ' (which were his initials).1 The Espe was of course a mutilated Wespe. The dream said clearly that he was avenging himself on Grusha for her threat of castration.

The action of the two-and-a-half-year-old boy in the scene with Grusha is the earliest effect of the primal scene which has come to our knowledge. It represents him as copying his father, and shows us a tendency towards development in a direction which would later deserve the name of masculine. His seduction drove him into passivity—for which, in any case, the way was prepared by his behaviour when he was a witness of his parents' intercourse.

I must here turn for a moment to the history of the treatment. When once the Grusha scene had been assimilated—the first experience that he could really remember, and one which he had remembered without any conjectures or intervention on my part—the problem of the treatment had every appearance of having been solved. From that time forward there were no more resistances; all that remained to be done was to collect

1 [In Austria 'Espe' and 'S.P.' would be pronounced exactly alike.]
and to co-ordinate. The old trauma theory of the neuroses,1 which was after all built up upon impressions gained from psycho-analytic practice, had suddenly come to the front once more. Out of critical interest I made one more attempt to force upon the patient another view of his story, which might commend itself more to sober common sense. It was true that there could be no doubt about the scene with Grusha, but, I suggested, in itself that scene meant nothing; it had been emphasized ex post facto by a regression from the circumstances of his object-choice, which, as a result of his intention to debase, had been diverted from his sister on to servant girls. On the other hand, his observation of intercourse, I argued, was a phantasy of his later years; its historical nucleus may perhaps have been an observation or an experience by the patient of the administration of an innocent enema. Some of my readers will possibly be inclined to think that with such hypotheses as these I was for the first time beginning to approach an understanding of the case; but the patient looked at me uncomprehendingly and in the discussion. [Section V above.]

[Thus 2 the Grusha scene, by explaining the conditions governing the patient's object-choice—conditions which were of decisive importance in his life—prevents our over-estimating the significance of his intention to debase women. But it does more than this. It affords me a justification for having refused to adopt unhesitatingly, as the only tenable explanation, the view that the primal scene was derived from an observation made upon animals shortly before the dream. The Grusha scene emerged in the patient's memory spontaneously and through no effort of mine. His fear of the yellow-striped butterfly, which went back to that scene, proved that the scene had had a significant content, or that he had been able to attach this significance to its content subsequently. By means of the accompanying associations and the inferences

1 [See the discussion of this in Freud's paper on the part played by sexuality in the etiology of the neuroses (1906a), Standard Ed., 7, 273 ff.]

2 [Author's square bracket. See end of footnote, p. 7.]

Nachträge aus der Urzeit—Lösung


Die Gruschaszene enthält aber nicht nur die für das Leben des Pa­tienten entscheidenden Bedingungen der Objektwahl und behütet uns so vor dem Irrtum, die Bedeutung der Erniedrigungstendenz gegen das Weib zu überschätzen. Sie vermag mich auch zu recht­fertigen, wenn ich es vorhin abgelehnt habe, die Zurückführung der Urszene auf eine kurz vor dem Traum angestellte Tierbeobachtung ohne jedes Bedenken als die einzig mögliche Lösung zu vertreten (S. 176 f.). Sie war in der Erinnerung des Patienten spontan und ohne mein Dazutun aufgetaucht. Die auf sie zurückgehende Angst vor dem gelbgestreiften Schmetterling be­wies, daß sie einen bedeutungsvollen Inhalt gehabt hatte oder daß es möglich geworden war, ihrem Inhalt nachträglich solche Bedeutung zu verleihen. Dies Bedeutungsvolle, was in der Erinnerung fehlte, war durch die sie begleitenden Einfälle und die daran zu knüpfenden Schlüsse

1 [Eckige Klammer von Freud selbst. S. den Schluß der Anmerkung auf S. 129 oben.]
that followed from them, it was possible with certainty to supply this significant element which was lacking in the patient's memory. It then appeared that his fear of the butterfly was in every respect analogous to his fear of the wolf; in both cases it was a fear of castration, which was, to begin with, referred to the person who had first uttered the threat of castration, but was then transposed on to another person to whom it was bound to become attached in accordance with phylogenetic precedent. The scene with Grusha had occurred when the patient was two and a half, but the anxiety-episode with the yellow butterfly was certainly subsequent to the anxiety-dream. It was easy to understand how the patient's later comprehension of the possibility of castration had retrospectively brought out the anxiety in the scene with Grusha. But that scene in itself contained nothing objectionable or improbable; on the contrary, it consisted entirely of commonplace details which gave no grounds for scepticism. There was nothing in it which could lead one to attribute its origin to the child's imagination; such a supposition, indeed, seemed scarcely possible.

The question now arises whether we are justified in regarding the fact that the boy micturated, while he stood looking at the girl on her knees scrubbing the floor, as a proof of sexual excitement on his part. If so, the excitement would be evidence of the influence of an earlier impression, which might equally have been the actual occurrence of the primal scene or an observation made upon animals before the age of two and a half. Or are we to conclude that the situation as regards Grusha was entirely innocent, that the child's emptying his bladder was purely accidental, and that it was not until later that the whole scene became sexualized in his memory, after he had come to recognize the importance of similar situations?

On these issues I can venture upon no decision. I must confess, however, that I regard it as greatly to the credit of psychoanalysis that it should even have reached the stage of raising such questions as these. Nevertheless, I cannot deny that the scene with Grusha, the part it played in the analysis, and the effects that followed from it in the patient's life can be most naturally and completely explained if we consider that the primal scene, which may in other cases be a phantasy, was a reality in the present one. After all, there is nothing impossible
about it; and the hypothesis of its reality is entirely compatible
with the inciting action of the observations upon animals which
are indicated by the sheep-dogs in the dream-picture.

I will now turn from this unsatisfactory conclusion to a con-
sideration of the problem which I have attempted in my
Introductory Lectures on Psycho-Analysis [Lecture XXIII]. I should
myself be glad to know whether the primal scene in my present
patient's case was a phantasy or a real experience; but, taking
other similar cases into account, I must admit that the answer
to this question is not in fact a matter of very great importance.
These scenes of observing parental intercourse, of being seduced
in childhood, and of being threatened with castration are un-
questionably an inherited endowment, a phylogenetic heritage,
but they may just as easily be acquired by personal experience.
With my patient, his seduction by his elder sister was a

All that we find in the prehistory of neuroses is that a child
catches hold of this phylogenetic experience where his own
experience fails him. He fills in the gaps in individual truth
with prehistoric truth; he replaces occurrences in his own life
by occurrences in the life of his ancestors. I fully agree with
Jung 1 in recognizing the existence of this phylogenetic heritage;
but I regard it as a methodological error to seize on a phylo-
genetic explanation before the ontogenetic possibilities have
been exhausted. I cannot see any reason for obstinately dis-
puting the importance of infantile prehistory while at the same
time freely acknowledging the importance of ancestral pre-
history. Nor can I overlook the fact that phylogenetic motives
and productions themselves stand in need of elucidation, and
that in quite a number of instances this is afforded by factors in
the childhood of the individual. And, finally, I cannot feel
surprised that what was originally produced by certain circum-
stances in prehistoric times and was then transmitted in the
shape of a predisposition to its re-acquisition should, since the
same circumstances persist, emerge once more as a concrete
event in the experience of the individual.

Room must also be found in the interval between the primal

1 Die Psychologie der unbewussten Prozesse, 1917. This was published too
late for it to have influenced my Introductory Lectures.
scene and the seduction (from the age of one and a half to the age of three and a quarter) for the dumb water-carrier [p. 87]. He served the patient as a father-surrogate just as Grusha served him as a mother-surrogate. I do not think there is any justification for regarding this as an example of the intention to debase, even though it is true that both parents have come to be represented by servants. A child pays no regard to social distinctions, which have little meaning for him as yet; and he classed people of inferior rank with his parents if such people love him as his parents do. Nor is the intention to debase any more responsible for the substitution of animals for a child's parents, for children are very far indeed from taking a disparaging view of animals.1 Uncles and aunts are used as parent-surrogates without any regard to the question of debasing, and this was in fact done by our present patient, as many of his recollections showed.

There also belongs in this period a phase, which was obscurely remembered, in which he would not eat anything except sweet things, until alarm was felt on the score of his health. He was told about one of his uncles who had refused to eat in the same way and had wasted away to death while he was still young. He was also informed that when he himself was three months old he had been so seriously ill (with pneumonia?) that his winding-sheet had been got ready for him. In this way they succeeded in alarming him, so that he began eating again; and in the later years of his childhood he used actually to overdo this duty, as though to guard himself against the threat of death. The fear of death, which was evoked at that time for his own protection, made its reappearance later when his mother warned him of the danger of dysentery [p. 77]. Later still, it brought on an attack of his obsessional neurosis (see p. 68). We shall try below [p. 107] to go into its origins and meanings.

I am inclined to the opinion that this disturbance of appetite should be regarded as the very first of the patient's neurotic illnesses. If so, the disturbance of appetite, the wolf phobia, and the obsessional piety would constitute the complete series of infantile disorders which laid down the predisposition for his neurotic break-down after he had passed the age of puberty. It will be objected that few children escape such disorders as a

1 [This point was dealt with by Freud at greater length in his paper 'A Difficulty in the Path of Psycho-Analysis' (1917a), below p. 140.]

In diese Zeit gehört noch eine dunkle Kunde von einer Phase, in der er nichts essen wollte außer Süßigkeiten, so daß man Sorge für sein Fortkommen hatte. Man erzählte ihm von einem Onkel, der ebenso das Essen verweigert hatte und dann jung an der Auszehrung starb. Er hörte auch, daß er im Alter von drei Monaten so schwer krank gewesen war (an einer Lungenentzündung?), daß man schon das Totenhemd für ihn bereit gemacht hatte. Es gelang, ihn ängstlich zu machen, so daß er wieder aß; in späteren Kindheitsjahren übertrieb er sogar diese Verpflichtung, wie um sich gegen den angedrohten Tod zu schützen. Die Todesangst, die man damals zu seinem Schutz wachgerufen hatte, zeigte sich später wieder, als die Mutter vor der Dysenteriegefahr warnte [S. 192]; sie provozierte noch später einen Anfall der Zwangsneurose (S. 184). Wir wollen versuchen, ihren Ursprüngen und Bedeutungen an späterer Stelle nachzugehen [S. 218].

Für die Essstörung möchte ich die Bedeutung einer allerersten neurotischen Erkrankung in Anspruch nehmen; so daß Essstörung, Wolfspinse, Zwangsfälligkeit die vollständige Reihe der infantilen Erkrankungen ergeben, welche die Disposition für den neurotischen Zusammenbruch in den Jahren nach der Pubertät mit sich bringen. Man wird mir entgegenhalten, daß wenige Kinder solchen Störungen wie
temporary loss of appetite or an animal phobia. But this argument is exactly what I should wish for. I am ready to assert that every neurosis in an adult is built upon a neurosis which has occurred in his childhood but has not invariably been severe enough to strike the eye and be recognized as such. This objection only serves to emphasize the theoretical importance of the part which infantile neuroses must play in our view of those later disorders which we treat as neuroses and endeavour to attribute entirely to the effects of adult life. If our present patient had not suffered from obsessional piety in addition to his disturbance of appetite and his animal phobia, his story would not have been noticeably different from that of other children, and we should have been the poorer by the loss of precious material which may guard us against certain plausible errors.

The analysis would be unsatisfactory if it failed to explain the phrase used by the patient for summing up the troubles of which he complained. The world, he said, was hidden from him by a veil [p. 75]; and our psychoanalytic training forbids our assuming that these words can have been without significance or have been chosen at haphazard. The veil was torn, strange to say, in one situation only; and that was at the moment when, as a result of an enema, he passed a motion through his anus. He then felt well again, and for a very short time he saw the world clearly. The interpretation of this 'veil' progressed with as much difficulty as we met with in clearing up his fear of the butterfly. Nor did he keep to the veil. It became still more elusive, as a feeling of twilight, 'tenèbres', and of other impalpable things.

It was not until just before taking leave of the treatment that he remembered having been told that he was born with a caul. He had for that reason always looked on himself as a special child of fortune whom no ill could befall. He did not lose that conviction until he was forced to realize that his gonorrhoeal infection constituted a serious injury to his body. The blow to his narcissism was too much for him and he went to pieces. It may be said that in so doing he was repeating a mechanism that he had already brought into play once before. For his wolf phobia had broken out when he found himself a vorübergehenden Eßunlust oder einer Tierphobie entgegen. Aber dies Argument ist mir sehr willkommen. Ich bin bereit zu behaupten, daß jede Neurose eines Erwachsenen sich über seiner Kinderneurose aufbaut, die aber nicht immer intensiv genug ist, um aufzufallen und als solche erkannt zu werden. Die theoretische Bedeutung der infantilen Neurosen für die Auffassung der Erkrankungen, die wir als Neurosen behandeln und nur von den Einwirkungen des späteren Lebens ableiten wollen, wird durch jenen Einwand nur gehoben. Hätte unser Patient nicht zu seiner Eßstörung und seiner Tierphobie noch die Zwangsfröm­
gigkeit hinzukommen, so würde sich seine Geschichte von der andere­ter Menschentod nicht auffällig unterscheiden, und wir wären um wertvolle Materialien, die uns vor naheliegenden Irrtümern bewahren können, ärmer.


Erst kurz vor dem Abschied von der Kur besann er sich, er habe gehört, daß er in einer Glückshaube zur Welt gekommen sei. Darum habe er sich immer für ein besonderes Glückskind gehalten, dem nichts Böses widerfahren könne. Erst dann verließ ihn diese Zuversicht, als er die gonorrhoeische Erkrankung als schwere Beschädigung an seinem Körper anerkennen mußte. Vor dieser Kränkung seines Narzissmus brach er zusammen. Wir werden sagen, er wiederholte damit einen Mechanismus, der schon einmal bei ihm gespielt hatte. Auch seine Wolfsphobie brach

1 [The German word for 'caul' (Glückshaube'), like the corresponding Scots expression 'sely bow', means literally 'lucky hood'.]
faced by the fact that such a thing as castration was possible; and he clearly classed his gonorrhoea as castration.

Thus the caul was the veil which hid him from the world and hid the world from him. The complaint that he made was in reality a fulfilled wishful phantasy: it exhibited him as back once more in the womb, and was, in fact, a wishful phantasy of flight from the world. It can be translated as follows: 'Life makes me so unhappy! I must get back into the womb!'

But what can have been the meaning of the fact that this veil, which was now symbolic but had once been real, was torn at the moment at which he evacuated his bowels after an enema, and that under this condition his illness left him? The context enables us to reply. If this birth-veil was torn, then he saw the world and was re-born. The stool was the child, as which he was born a second time, to a happier life. Here, then, we have the phantasy of re-birth, to which Jung has recently drawn attention and to which he has assigned such a dominating position in the imaginative life of neurotics.

This would be all very well, if it were the whole story. But certain details of the situation, and a due regard for the connection between it and this particular patient's life-history, compel us to pursue the interpretation further. The necessary condition of his re-birth was that he should have an enema administered to him by a man. (It was not until later on that he was driven by necessity to take this man's place himself.) This can only have meant that he had identified himself with his mother, that the man was acting as his father, and that the enema was repeating the act of copulation, as the fruit of which the excrement-baby (which was once again himself) would be born. The phantasy of re-birth was therefore bound up closely with the necessary condition of sexual satisfaction from a man. So that the translation now runs to this effect: only on condition that he took the woman's place and substituted himself for his mother, and thus let himself be sexually satisfied by his father and bore him a child—only on that condition would his illness leave him. Here, therefore, the phantasy of re-birth was simply a mutilated and censored version of the homosexual wishful phantasy.

If we look into the matter more closely we cannot help remarking that in this condition which he laid down for his illness to leave him, the phantasy of re-birth was that he should have an enema administered to him by a man. (It was not until later on that he was driven by necessity to take this man's place himself.) This can only have meant that he had identified himself with his mother, that the man was acting as his father, and that the enema was repeating the act of copulation, as the fruit of which the excrement-baby (which was once again himself) would be born. The phantasy of re-birth was therefore bound up closely with the necessary condition of sexual satisfaction from a man. So that the translation now runs to this effect: only on condition that he took the woman's place and substituted himself for his mother, and thus let himself be sexually satisfied by his father and bore him a child—only on that condition would his illness leave him. Here, therefore, the phantasy of re-birth was simply a mutilated and censored version of the homosexual wishful phantasy.

If we look into the matter more closely we cannot help remarking that in this condition which he laid down for his illness to leave him, the phantasy of re-birth was that he should have an enema administered to him by a man. (It was not until later on that he was driven by necessity to take this man's place himself.) This can only have meant that he had identified himself with his mother, that the man was acting as his father, and that the enema was repeating the act of copulation, as the fruit of which the excrement-baby (which was once again himself) would be born. The phantasy of re-birth was therefore bound up closely with the necessary condition of sexual satisfaction from a man. So that the translation now runs to this effect: only on condition that he took the woman's place and substituted himself for his mother, and thus let himself be sexually satisfied by his father and bore him a child—only on that condition would his illness leave him. Here, therefore, the phantasy of re-birth was simply a mutilated and censored version of the homosexual wishful phantasy.

If we look into the matter more closely we cannot help remarking that in this condition which he laid down for his illness to leave him, the phantasy of re-birth was that he should have an enema administered to him by a man. (It was not until later on that he was driven by necessity to take this man's place himself.) This can only have meant that he had identified himself with his mother, that the man was acting as his father, and that the enema was repeating the act of copulation, as the fruit of which the excrement-baby (which was once again himself) would be born. The phantasy of re-birth was therefore bound up closely with the necessary condition of sexual satisfaction from a man. So that the translation now runs to this effect: only on condition that he took the woman's place and substituted himself for his mother, and thus let himself be sexually satisfied by his father and bore him a child—only on that condition would his illness leave him. Here, therefore, the phantasy of re-birth was simply a mutilated and censored version of the homosexual wishful phantasy.

If we look into the matter more closely we cannot help remarking that in this condition which he laid down for his illness to leave him, the phantasy of re-birth was that he should have an enema administered to him by a man. (It was not until later on that he was driven by necessity to take this man's place himself.) This can only have meant that he had identified himself with his mother, that the man was acting as his father, and that the enema was repeating the act of copulation, as the fruit of which the excrement-baby (which was once again himself) would be born. The phantasy of re-birth was therefore bound up closely with the necessary condition of sexual satisfaction from a man. So that the translation now runs to this effect: only on condition that he took the woman's place and substituted himself for his mother, and thus let himself be sexually satisfied by his father and bore him a child—only on that condition would his illness leave him. Here, therefore, the phantasy of re-birth was simply a mutilated and censored version of the homosexual wishful phantasy.

If we look into the matter more closely we cannot help remarking that in this condition which he laid down for his illness to leave him, the phantasy of re-birth was that he should have an enema administered to him by a man. (It was not until later on that he was driven by necessity to take this man's place himself.) This can only have meant that he had identified himself with his mother, that the man was acting as his father, and that the enema was repeating the act of copulation, as the fruit of which the excrement-baby (which was once again himself) would be born. The phantasy of re-birth was therefore bound up closely with the necessary condition of sexual satisfaction from a man. So that the translation now runs to this effect: only on condition that he took the woman's place and substituted himself for his mother, and thus let himself be sexually satisfied by his father and bore him a child—only on that condition would his illness leave him. Here, therefore, the phantasy of re-birth was simply a mutilated and censored version of the homosexual wishful phantasy.

If we look into the matter more closely we cannot help remarking that in this condition which he laid down for his illness to leave him, the phantasy of re-birth was that he should have an enema administered to him by a man. (It was not until later on that he was driven by necessity to take this man's place himself.) This can only have meant that he had identified himself with his mother, that the man was acting as his father, and that the enema was repeating the act of copulation, as the fruit of which the excrement-baby (which was once again himself) would be born. The phantasy of re-birth was therefore bound up closely with the necessary condition of sexual satisfaction from a man. So that the translation now runs to this effect: only on condition that he took the woman's place and substituted himself for his mother, and thus let himself be sexually satisfied by his father and bore him a child—only on that condition would his illness leave him. Here, therefore, the phantasy of re-birth was simply a mutilated and censored version of the homosexual wishful phantasy.

If we look into the matter more closely we cannot help remarking that in this condition which he laid down for his illness to leave him, the phantasy of re-birth was that he should have an enema administered to him by a man. (It was not until later on that he was driven by necessity to take this man's place himself.) This can only have meant that he had identified himself with his mother, that the man was acting as his father, and that the enema was repeating the act of copulation, as the fruit of which the excrement-baby (which was once again himself) would be born. The phantasy of re-birth was therefore bound up closely with the necessary condition of sexual satisfaction from a man. So that the translation now runs to this effect: only on condition that he took the woman's place and substituted himself for his mother, and thus let himself be sexually satisfied by his father and bore him a child—only on that condition would his illness leave him. Here, therefore, the phantasy of re-birth was simply a mutilated and censored version of the homosexual wishful phantasy.

If we look into the matter more closely we cannot help remarking that in this condition which he laid down for his illness to leave him, the phantasy of re-birth was that he should have an enema administered to him by a man. (It was not until later on that he was driven by necessity to take this man's place himself.) This can only have meant that he had identified himself with his mother, that the man was acting as his father, and that the enema was repeating the act of copulation, as the fruit of which the excrement-baby (which was once again himself) would be born. The phantasy of re-birth was therefore bound up closely with the necessary condition of sexual satisfaction from a man. So that the translation now runs to this effect: only on condition that he took the woman's place and substituted himself for his mother, and thus let himself be sexually satisfied by his father and bore him a child—only on that condition would his illness leave him. Here, therefore, the phantasy of re-birth was simply a mutilated and censored version of the homosexual wishful phantasy.

If we look into the matter more closely we cannot help remarking that in this condition which he laid down for his illness to leave him, the phantasy of re-birth was that he should have an enema administered to him by a man. (It was not until later on that he was driven by necessity to take this man's place himself.) This can only have meant that he had identified himself with his mother, that the man was acting as his father, and that the enema was repeating the act of copulation, as the fruit of which the excrement-baby (which was once again himself) would be born. The phantasy of re-birth was therefore bound up closely with the necessary condition of sexual satisfaction from a man. So that the translation now runs to this effect: only on condition that he took the woman's place and substituted himself for his mother, and thus let himself be sexually satisfied by his father and bore him a child—only on that condition would his illness leave him. Here, therefore, the phantasy of re-birth was simply a mutilated and censored version of the homosexual wishful phantasy.
recovery the patient was simply repeating the state of affairs at the time of the ‘primal scene’. At that moment he had wanted to substitute himself for his mother; and, as we assumed long ago, it was he himself who, in the scene in question, had produced the excrement-baby. He still remained fixated, as though by a spell, to the scene which had such a decisive effect on his sexual life, and the return of which during the night of the dream brought the onset of his illness. The tearing of the veil was analogous to the opening of his eyes and to the opening of the window. The primal scene had become transformed into the necessary condition for his recovery.

It is easy to make a unified statement of what was expressed on the one hand by the complaint he made and on the other hand by the single exceptional condition under which the complaint no longer held good, and thus to make clear the whole meaning that underlay the two factors: he wished he could be back in the womb, not simply in order that he might then be re-born, but in order that he might be copulated with there by his father, might obtain sexual satisfaction from him, and might bear him a child.

The wish to be born of his father (as he had at first believed was the case), the wish to be sexually satisfied by him, the wish to present him with a child—and all of this at the price of his own masculinity, and expressed in the language of anal erotism—these wishes complete the circle of his fixation upon his father. In them homosexuality has found its furthest and most intimate expression.¹

This instance, I think, throws light on the meaning and origin of the womb-phantasy as well as that of re-birth. The former, the womb-phantasy, is frequently derived (as it was in the present case) from an attachment to the father. There is a wish to be inside the mother’s womb in order to replace her during intercourse—in order to take her place in regard to the father. The phantasy of re-birth, on the other hand, is in all probability regularly a softened substitute (a euphemism, one might say) for the phantasy of incestuous intercourse with the mother.

¹ A possible subsidiary explanation, namely that the veil represented the hymen which is torn at the moment of intercourse with a man, does not harmonize completely with the necessary condition for his recovery. Moreover it has no bearing on the life of the patient, for whom virginity carried no significance.
mother; to make use of Silberer’s expression, it is an *anagoge*\(^1\) abbreviation of it. There is a wish to be back in a situation in which one was in the mother’s genitals; and in this connection the man is identifying himself with his own penis and is using it to represent himself. Thus the two phantasies are revealed as each other’s counterparts: they give expression, according as the subject’s attitude is feminine or masculine, to his wish for sexual intercourse with his father or with his mother. We cannot dismiss the possibility that in the complaint made by our present patient and in the necessary condition laid down for his recovery the two phantasies, that is to say the two incestuous wishes, were united.\(^2\)

I will make a final attempt at re-interpreting the last findings of this analysis in accordance with the scheme of my opponents. The patient lamented his flight from the world in a typical womb-phantasy and viewed his recovery as a typically conceived re-birth. In accordance with the predominant side of his disposition, he expressed the latter in anal symptoms. He next concocted, on the model of his anal phantasy of re-birth, a childhood scene which repeated his wishes in an archaic-symbolic medium of expression. His symptoms were then strung together as though they had been derived from a primal scene of that kind. He was driven to embark on this long backward course either because he had come up against some task in life which he was too lazy to perform, or because he had every reason to be aware of his own inferiority and thought he could best protect himself from being slighted by elaborating such contrivances as these.

All this would be very nice, if only the unlucky wretch had not had a dream when he was no more than four years old, which signalized the beginning of his neurosis, which was instigated by his grandfather’s story of the tailor and the wolf, and the interpretation of which necessitates the assumption of this primal scene. All the alleviations which the theories of Jung and Adler seek to afford us come to grief, alas, upon such paltry but unimpeachable facts as these. As things stand, it

\(^1\) This term of Silberer’s is explained and discussed in an addition made in 1919 to *The Interpretation of Dreams* (1900a), *Standard Ed.*, 5, 524.

\(^2\) See the discussion of the ‘complete’ Oedipus complex in Chapter III of *The Ego and the Id* (1923b).
seems to me more probable that the phantasy of re-birth was a derivative of the primal scene than that, conversely, the primal scene was a reflection of the phantasy of re-birth. And we may perhaps suppose, too, that the patient, at a time only four years after his birth, may after all have been too young to be already wishing to be born again. But no, I must take this last argument back; for my own observations show that we have rated the powers of children too low and that there is no knowing what they cannot be given credit for.\(^1\)

\(^1\) I admit that this is the most delicate question in the whole domain of psycho-analysis. I did not require the contributions of Adler or Jung to induce me to consider the matter with a critical eye, and to bear in mind the possibility that what analysis puts forward as being forgotten experiences of childhood (and of an improbably early childhood) may on the contrary be based upon phantasies created on occasions occurring late in life. According to this view, wherever we seemed in analyses to see traces of the after-effects of an infantile impression of the kind in question, we should rather have to assume that we were faced by the manifestation of some constitutional factor or of some disposition that had been phylogenetically maintained. On the contrary, no doubt has troubled me more; no other uncertainty has been more decisive in holding me back from publishing my conclusions. I was the first—a point to which none of my opponents have referred—to recognize both the part played by phantasies in symptom-formation and also the 'retrospective phantasying' of late impressions into childhood and their sexualization after the event. (See my *Interpretation of Dreams* (1900a), First Edition, p. 49, and 'Notes upon a Case of Obsessional Neurosis', (1909d) [[Standard Ed., 10, 206 ff., footnote.]] If, in spite of this, I have held to the more difficult and more improbable view, it has been as a result of arguments such as are forced upon the investigator by the case described in these pages or by any other infantile neurosis—arguments which I once again lay before my readers for their decision.

(The reference to p. 49 of the first edition of *Die Traumdeutung* which is given in all editions of this paper would correspond to *Standard Ed.*, 4, 70–1. No relevant passage, however, occurs there and evidently a wrong page number has been given. It seems likely that Freud had in mind a passage occurring in *Standard Ed.*, 4, 288, which corresponds to p. 198 of the first edition of *Die Traumdeutung*. He there uses the same term 'retrospective phantasy' ('zurückphantasieren') as in the present footnote.)

Nachträg aus der Urzeit – Lösung

scheint mir die Wiedergeburtsphantasie eher ein Abkömmling der Uruzene, als umgekehrt die Uruzene eine Spiegelung der Wiedergeburtsphantasie zu sein. Vielleicht darf man auch annehmen, der Patient sei damals, vier Jahre nach seiner Geburt, doch zu jung gewesen, um sich bereits eine Wiedergeburts zu wünschen. Aber dieses letztere Argument muß ich doch zurückziehen; meine eigenen Beobachtungen beweisen, daß man die Kinder unterschätzt hat und daß man nicht mehr weiß, was man ihnen zutrauen darf.


[Der Verweis auf S. 49 in der ersten Ausgabe der *Traumdeutung*, der in allen deutschen Ausgaben der vorliegenden Arbeit abgedruckt ist, beruht offenbar auf einem Irrtum. Wahrscheinlich dachte Freud an eine Passage in Kapitel VI, A, gegen Ende des Abschnittes II (S. 198 der ersten Ausgabe der *Traumdeutung*). Dort verwendet er ebenfalls den Terminus «zurückphantasieren» wie in dieser Anmerkung.]
I do not know if the reader of this report of an analysis will have succeeded in forming a clear picture of the origin and development of the patient's illness. I fear that, on the contrary, this will not have been the case. But though on other occasions I have said very little on behalf of my powers of such deep strata of mental life has been a task which has never before been attacked; and it is better to perform that task badly than to take flight before it—a proceeding which would moreover (or so we are told) involve the coward in risks of a certain kind. I prefer, therefore, to put a bold face on it and show that I have not allowed myself to be held back by a sense of my own inferiority.

The case itself was not a particularly favourable one. The advantage of having a wealth of information about the patient's childhood (an advantage which was made possible by the fact that the child could be studied through the medium of the adult) had to be purchased at the expense of the analysis being most terribly disjointed and of the exposition showing corresponding gaps. Personal peculiarities in the patient and a national character that was foreign to ours made the task of feeling one's way into his mind a laborious one. The contrast between the patient's agreeable and affable personality, his acute intelligence and his nice-mindedness on the one hand, and his completely unbridled instinctual life on the other, necessitated an excessively long process of preparatory education, and this made a general perspective more difficult. But the patient himself has no responsibility for that feature of the case which put the severest obstacles in the way of any description of it. In the psychology of adults we have fortunately reached the point of being able to divide mental processes into conscious and unconscious and of being able to give a clearly-worded description of both. With children this distinction leaves us almost completely in the lurch. It is often embarrassing to

---

IX

RECAPITULATIONS AND PROBLEMS

IX

ZUSAMMENFASSUNGEN UND PROBLEME
decide what one would choose to call conscious and what unconscious. Processes which have become the dominant ones, and which from their subsequent behaviour must be equated with conscious ones, have nevertheless not been conscious in the child. It is easy to understand why. In children the conscious has not yet acquired all its characteristics; it is still in process of development, and it does not as yet fully possess the capacity for transposing itself into verbal images. We are constantly guilty of making a confusion between the phenomenon of emergence as a perception in consciousness and the fact of belonging to a hypothetical psychical system to which we ought to assign some conventional name, but which we in fact also call 'consciousness' (the system C). This confusion does no harm when we are giving a psychological description of an adult, but it is misleading when we are dealing with that of a young child. Nor should we be much assisted here if we introduced the 'preconscious'; for a child's preconscious may, in just the same way, fail to coincide with an adult's. We must be content, therefore, with having clearly recognized the obscurity.

It is obvious that a case such as that which is described in these pages might be made an excuse for dragging into the discussion every one of the findings and problems of psychoanalysis. But this would be an endless and unjustifiable labour. It must be recognized that everything cannot be learnt from a single case and that everything cannot be decided by it; we must content ourselves with exploiting whatever it may happen to show most clearly. There are in any case narrow limits to what a psycho-analysis is called upon to explain. For, while it is its business to explain the striking symptoms by revealing their genesis, it is not its business to explain but merely to describe the psychical mechanisms and instinctual processes to which one is led by that means. In order to derive fresh generalizations from what has thus been established with regard to the mechanisms and instincts, it would be essential to have at one's disposal numerous cases as thoroughly and deeply analysed as the present one. But they are not easily to be had, and each one of them requires years of labour. So that advances in these spheres of knowledge must necessarily be slow. There is no doubt a great temptation to content oneself with 'scratching' the mental surface of a number of people and of replacing what is left undone by speculation—the latter being put under the

Zusammenfassungen und Probleme

anzugeben, was man als bewußt und was man als unbewußt bezeichnen möchte. Vorgänge, die die herrschenden geworden sind und die nach ihrem späteren Verhalten den bewußten gleichgestellt werden müssen, sind beim Kinde dennoch nicht bewußt gewesen. Man kann leicht verstehen, warum; das Bewußtse ist beim Kinde noch nicht alle seine Charaktere gewonnen, es ist noch in der Entwicklung begriffen und besitzt nicht recht die Fähigkeit, sich in Sprachvorstellungen umzusetzen. Die Verwechslung, deren wir uns sonst regelmäßigkeit schuldig machen, zwischen dem Phänomen, als Wahrnehmung im Bewußtsein aufzutreten, und der Zugehörigkeit zu einem angenommenen psychischen System, das wir irgendwie konventionell benennen sollten, das wir aber gleichfalls Bewußtein (System Bw) heißen, verwechslung ist harmlos bei der psychologischen Beschreibung des Erwachsenen, aber irreführend für die des kleinen Kindes. Auch die Einführung des »Vorbeweßte« nützt hier nicht viel, denn das Vorbewußte des Kindes braucht sich mit dem des Erwachsenen ebensowenig zu decken. Man begnügt sich also damit, die Dunkelheit klar erkannt zu haben.

Es ist selbstverständlich, daß ein Fall wie der hier beschriebene Anlaß geben könnte, alle Ergebnisse und Probleme der Psychoanalyse in Diskussion zu ziehen. Es wäre eine unendliche und eine ungerechtfertigte Arbeit. Man muß sich sagen, daß man aus einem einzigen Fall nicht alles erfahren, an ihm nicht alles entscheiden kann, und sich darum begnügen, ihn für das zu verwerten, was er am deutlichsten zeigt. Die Erklärungsaufgabe in der Psychoanalyse ist überhaupt enge begrenzt. Zu erklären sind die auffälligen Symptombildungen durch Aufdeckung ihrer Genese; die psychischen Mechanismen und Triebvorgänge, zu denen man so gefunden wird, sind nicht zu erklären, sondern zu beschreiben. Um aus den Feststellungen über diese beiden letzteren Punkte neue Allgemeinheiten zu gewinnen, sind zahlreiche solche gut und tief analysierte Fälle erforderlich. Sie sind nicht leicht zu haben, jeder einzelne verbraucht jahrelange Arbeit. Der Fortschritt in diesen Gebieten kann sich also nur langsam vollziehen. Die Versuchung liegt freilich sehr nahe, sich damit zu begnügen, daß man bei einer Anzahl von Personen die psychische Oberfläche »ankratzt« und das Unterlassene dann durch Spekulation ersetzt, die man unter die
AN INFANTILE NEUROSIS

I shall now attempt to sketch out a synthetic survey of my patient's sexual development, beginning from its earliest indications. The first that we hear of it is in the disturbance of his appetite [p. 98]; for, taking other observations into account, I am inclined, though with due reservations, to regard that as a result of some process in the sphere of sexuality. I have been driven to regard as the earliest recognizable sexual organization the so-called 'cannibalistic' or 'oral' phase, during which the original attachment of sexual excitation to the nutritional instinct still dominates the scene. It is not to be expected that we should come upon direct manifestations of this phase, but only upon indications of it where disturbances have been set up. Impairment of the nutritional instinct (though this can of course have other causes) draws our attention to a failure on the part of the organism to master its sexual excitation. In this phase the sexual aim could only be cannibalism—devouring; it makes its appearance with our present patient through regression from a higher stage, in the form of fear of 'being eaten by the wolf'. We were, indeed, obliged to translate this into a fear of being copulated with by his father. It is well known that there is a neurosis in girls which occurs at a much later age, at the time of puberty or soon afterwards, and which expresses aversion to sexuality by means of anorexia. This neurosis will have to be brought into relation with the oral phase of sexual life. The erotic aim of the oral organization further makes its appearance at the height of a lover's paroxysm (in such phrases as 'I could eat you up with love') and in affectionate relations with children, when the grown-up person is pretending to be a child himself. I have elsewhere given voice to a suspicion that the father of our present patient used himself to indulge in 'affectionate abuse', and may have played at wolf or dog with the little boy and have threatened as a joke to gobble him up (p. 32). The patient confirmed this suspicion by his curious behaviour in the transference. Whenever he shrank back on to the transference from the difficulties of the treatment, he used

1 [See a section added in 1915 to Freud's *Three Essays* (1905d), *Standard Ed.*, 7, 198, and *Instincts and their Vicissitudes* (1915c).]
to threaten me with eating me up and later with all kinds of other ill-treatment—all of which was merely an expression of affection.

Permanent marks have been left by this oral phase of sexuality upon the usages of language. People commonly speak for instance, of an ‘appetizing’ love-object, and describe persons they are fond of as ‘sweet’. It will be remembered, too, that our little patient would only eat sweet things. In dreams sweet things and sweetmeats stand regularly for caresses or sexual gratifications.

It appears, moreover, that there is an anxiety belonging to this phase (only, of course, where some disturbance has arisen) which manifests itself as a fear of death and may be attached to anything that is pointed out to the child as being suitable for the purpose. With our patient it was employed to induce him to overcome his loss of appetite and indeed to overcompensate for it. A possible origin of this disturbance of his appetite

...
his identification with his father as being narcissistic; but if we
take the content of the primal scene into account we cannot
deny that it had already reached the stage of genital organiza-
tion. His male genital organ had begun to play its part and it
continued to do so under the influence of his seduction by his
sister.

But his seduction gives the impression not merely of having
encouraged his sexual development but of having, to an even
greater extent, disturbed and diverted it. It offered him a
passive sexual aim, which was ultimately incompatible with the
action of his male genital organ. At the first external obstacle,
the threat of castration from his Nanya, his genital organization,
half-hearted as it still was, broke down (at the age of three and a
half) and regressed to the stage which had preceded it, namely
to that of the sadistic-anal organization, which he might other-
wise have passed through, perhaps, with as slight indications as
other children.

The sadistic-anal organization can easily be regarded as a
continuation and development of the oral one. The violent
muscular activity, directed upon the object, by which it is
characterized, is to be explained as an action preparatory to
eating. The eating then ceases to be a sexual aim, and the
preparatory action becomes a sufficient aim in itself. The
essential novelty, as compared with the previous stage, is that
the receptive passive function becomes disengaged from the oral
zone and attached to the anal zone. In this connection we can
hardly fail to think of biological parallels or of the theory that
the pregenital organizations in man should be regarded as
vestiges of conditions which have been permanently retained in
several classes of animals. The building up of the instinct for
research out of its various components is another characteristic
feature of this stage of development.

The boy's anal erotism was not particularly noticeable.
Under the influence of his sadism the affective significance of faeces
gave place to an aggressive one. A part was played in
the transformation of his sadism into masochism by a sense of
guilt, the presence of which points to developmental processes in
spheres other than the sexual one.

His seduction continued to make its influence felt, by main-
taining the passivity of his sexual aim. It transformed his sadism

1 [In the editions before 1924 this read 'three and three quarters'.]

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose

wir bisher als eine narzisstische aufgefaßt, mit Rücksicht auf den Inhalt
der Urszene können wir es nicht abweisen, daß sie bereits der Stufe der
Genitalorganisation entspricht. Das männliche Genitale hat seine Rolle
to spielen begonnen und setzt sie unter dem Einflüß der Verführung

durch die Schwester fort.

Man bekommt aber den Eindruck, daß die Verführung nicht bloß die
Entwicklung fördert, sondern sie noch in höherem Grade stört und
ablekt. Sie gibt ein passives Sexualziel, welches mit der Aktion des
männlichen Genitales im Grunde unverträglich ist. Beim ersten äußeren
Hindernis, bei der Kastrationsandeutung der Nanja, bricht (mit 3½
Jahren) die noch zaghafte genitale Organisation zusammen und regre-
diert auf die ihr vorhergehende Stufe der sadistisch-analen Organisa-
tion, welche vielleicht sonst mit ebenso leichten Anzeichen wie bei
anderen Kindern durchlaufen worden wäre.

Die sadistisch-anale Organisation ist leicht als Fortbildung der oralen
zu erkennen. Die gewaltsame Muskelbetätigung am Objekt, die sie aus-
zeichnet, findet ihre Stelle als vorbereitender Akt für das Fressen, das
dann als Sexualziel ausfällt. Der vorbereitende Akt wird ein selbstän-
diges Ziel. Die Neuheit gegen die vorige Stufe besteht wesentlich darin,
dazu das aufnehmende, passive Organ, von der Mundzone abgesondert,
mit der Analzone ausgebildet wird. Biologische Parallelen oder die Auf-
fassung der prägenitalen menschlichen Organisationen als Reste von
Einzrichtungen, die in manchen Tierklassen dauernd festgehalten wer-
den, liegen hier sehr nahe. Die Konstituierung des Forschertriebes aus
seinen Komponenten ist für diese Stufe gleichfalls charakteristisch.

Die Analerotik macht sich nicht auffällig bemerkbar. Der Kot hat unter
dem Einfluß des Sadismus seine zärtliche gegen seine offensive Bedeu-
tung verloren. An der Verwandlung des Sadismus in Masochismus ist
ein Schuldgefühl mitbeteiligt, welches auf Entwicklungsvorgänge in
anderen als den sexuellen Sphären hinweist.

Die Verführung setzt ihren Einfluß fort, indem sie die Passivität des
Sexualziels aufrechterhält. Sie verwandelt jetzt den Sadismus zu einem

1 [In den Ausgaben vor 1924 hieß es an dieser Stelle «mit 3½ Jahren».]
to a great extent into the masochism which was its passive counterpart. But it is questionable whether the seduction can be made entirely responsible for this characteristic of passivity, for the child’s reaction to his observation of intercourse at the age of one and a half was already preponderantly a passive one. His sympathetic sexual excitement expressed itself by his passing a stool, though it is true that in this behaviour an active element is also to be distinguished. Side by side with the masochism which dominated his sexual impulses and also found expression in phantasies, his sadism, too, persisted and was directed against small animals. His sexual researches had set in from the time of the seduction and had been concerned, in essence, with two problems: the origin of children and the possibility of losing the genitals. These researches wove themselves into the manifestations of his instinctual impulses, and directed his sadistic propensities on to small animals as being representatives of small children.

We have now carried our account down to about the time of the boy’s fourth birthday, and it was at that point that the dream brought into deferred operation his observation of intercourse at the age of one and a half. It is not possible for us completely to grasp or adequately to describe what now ensued. The activation of the picture, which, thanks to the advance in his intellectual development, he was now able to understand, operated not only like a fresh event, but like a new trauma, like an interference from outside analogous to the seduction. The genital organization which had been broken off was re-established at a single blow; but the advance that was achieved in the dream could not be maintained. On the contrary, there came about, by means of a process that can only be equated with a repression, a repudiation of the new element and its replacement by a phobia.

Thus the sadistic-anal organization continued to exist during the phase of the animal phobia which now set in, only it suffered an admixture of anxiety-phenomena. The child persisted in his sadistic as well as in his masochistic activities, but he reacted with anxiety to a portion of them; the conversion of his sadism into its opposite probably made further progress.

The analysis of the anxiety-dream shows us that the repression was connected with his recognition of the existence of castration. The new element was rejected because its acceptance großen Teil in sein passives Gegenstück, den Masochismus. Es ist fraglich, ob man den Charakter der Passivität ganz auf ihre Rechnung setzen darf, denn die Reaktion des 1½ jährigen Kindes auf die Koitusbeobachtung war bereits vorwiegend eine passive. Die sexuelle Miterregung äußerte sich in einer Stuhlintention, an der allerdings auch ein aktiver Anteil zu unterscheiden ist. Neben dem Masochismus, der seine Sexualverlangen beherrscht und sich in Phantasien äußert, bleibt auch der Sadismus bestehen und betäubt sich gegen kleine Tiere. Seine Sexualforschung hat von der Verführung an eingesetzt, wesentlich zwei Probleme in Angriff genommen, woher die Kinder kommen, und ob ein Verlust des Genitales möglich ist, und verwebt sich mit den Äußerungen seiner Triebschwingungen. Sie lenkt seine sadistischen Neigungen auf die kleinen Tiere als Repräsentanten der kleinen Kinder.

Wir haben die Schilderung bis in die Nähe des vierten Geburtstages geführt, zu welchem Zeitpunkt die Koitusbeobachtung von 1½ Jahren zur nachträglichen Wirkung bringt. Die Vorgänge, die sich nun abspielen, können wir weder vollständig erfassen, noch sie hinreichend beschreiben. Die Aktivierung des Bildes, das nun dank der vorgeschrittenen intellektuellen Entwicklung verstanden werden kann, wirkt wie ein frisches Ereignis, aber auch wie ein neues Trauma, ein fremder Eingriff analog der Verführung. Die abgebrochene genitale Organisation wird mit einem Schlage wieder eingesetzt, aber der im Traum vollzogene Fortschritt kann nicht festgehalten werden. Es kommt vielmehr durch einen Vorgang, den man nur einer Verdrängung gleichstellen kann, zur Ablehnung des Neuen und dessen Ersetzung durch eine Phobie.

Die sadistisch-anale Organisation bleibt also auch in der jetzt einsetzenden Phase der Tierphobie fortbestehen, nur sind ihr die Angsterscheinungen beigemengt. Das Kind setzt die sadistischen wie die masochistischen Betätigungen fort, doch reagierte es mit Angst gegen einen Teil derselben; die Verkehrung des Sadismus in sein Gegenteil macht wahr­scheinlich weitere Fortschritte.

Aus der Analyse des Angsträumes entnehmen wir, daß die Verdrängung sich an die Erkenntnis der Kastration anschließt. Das Neue wird verworfen, weil seine Annahme
would have cost him his penis. Closer consideration leads us to some such conclusion as the following. What was repressed was the homosexual attitude understood in the genital sense, an attitude which had been formed under the influence of this recognition of castration. But that attitude was retained as regards the unconscious and set up as a dissociated and deeper stratum. The motive force of the repression seems to have been the narcissistic masculinity which attached to the boy's genitals, and which had come into a long-prepared conflict with the passivity of his homosexual sexual aim. The repression was thus a result of his masculinity.

One might be tempted at this point to introduce a slight alteration into psycho-analytic theory. It would seem palpably obvious that the repression and the formation of the neurosis must have originated out of the conflict between masculine and feminine tendencies, that is out of bisexuality. This view of the situation, however, is incomplete. Of the two conflicting sexual impulses one was ego-syntonic, while the other offended the boy's narcissistic interest; it was on that account that the latter underwent repression. So that in this case, too, it was the ego that put the repression into operation, for the benefit of one of the sexual tendencies. In other cases there is no such conflict between masculinity and femininity; there is only a single sexual tendency present, which seeks for acceptance, but offends against certain forces of the ego and is consequently repelled. Indeed, conflicts between sexuality and the moral ego trends are far more common than such as take place within the sphere of sexuality; but a moral conflict of this kind is lacking in our present case. To insist that bisexuality is the motive force leading to repression is to take too narrow a view; whereas if we assert the same of the conflict between the ego and the sexual tendencies (that is, the libido) we shall have covered all possible cases.

The theory of the 'masculine protest', as it has been developed by Adler, is faced by the difficulty that repression by no means always takes the side of masculinity against femininity; there are quite large classes of cases in which it is masculinity that has to submit to repression by the ego.

Moreover, a juster appreciation of the process of repression in our present case would lead us to deny that narcissistic masculinity was the sole motive force. The homosexual attitude which
came into being during the dream was of such overwhelming intensity that the little boy's ego found itself unable with it and so defended itself against it by the process of repression. The narcissistic masculinity which attached to his genitals, being opposed to the homosexual attitude, was repression. 1 The narcissistic masculinity which attached to his

1 [Freud had insisted from very early times, e.g. in Section 6 of Part I of his 'Project for a Scientific Psychology' (1950a [1895]), on the traumatic effects of excessive excitation. In Chapter II of Inhibitions, Symptoms and Anxiety (1926d), he writes: 'It is highly probable that the immediate precipitating causes of primal repressions are quantitative factors such as an excessive degree of excitation and the breaking through of the protective shield against stimuli.']

Let us now leave the process of repression, though we have perhaps not succeeded in dealing with it exhaustively, and let us turn to the boy's state when he awoke from the dream. If it had really been his masculinity that had triumphed over his homosexuality (or femininity) during the dream-process, then we should necessarily find that the dominant trend was an active sexual trend of a character already explicitly masculine. But there is no question of this having happened. The essentials of the sexual organization had not been changed; the sadistic-anal phase persisted, and remained the dominant one. The triumph of his masculinity was shown only in this: that thenceforward he reacted with anxiety to the passive sexual aims of the dominant organization—aims which were masochistic but not feminine. We are not confronted by a triumphant masculine sexual trend, but only by a passive one and a struggle against it.

I can well imagine the difficulties that the reader must find in the sharp distinction (unfamiliar but essential) which I have drawn between 'active' and 'masculine' and between 'passive' and 'feminine'. I shall therefore not hesitate to repeat myself. The state of affairs, then, after the dream, may be described as follows. The sexual trends had been split up; in the unconscious and Anxiéty)

1 [Adler's Verdrängungstheorie wird von Freud noch detaillierter im letzten Teil seiner Arbeit über Schlagphantasien (1919e) erörtert.]
very intense homosexuality set up; on the top of this (virtually in the conscious) there persisted the earlier sadistic and predominantly masochistic sexual current; the ego had on the whole changed its attitude towards sexuality, for it now repudiated sexuality and rejected the dominant masochistic aims with anxiety, just as it had reacted to the deeper homosexual aims with the formation of a phobia. Thus the result of the dream was not so much a dominance masochistic sexual current; the ego had on the whole changed its attitude towards sexuality, for it now repudiated sexuality and rejected the dominant masochistic aims with anxiety, just as it had reacted to the deeper homosexual aims with the formation of a phobia. Thus the result of the dream was not so much the triumph of a masculine current, as a reaction against a feminine and passive one. It would be very forced to ascribe the quality of masculinity to this reaction. The truth is that the ego has no sexual currents, but only an interest in its own self-protection and in the preservation of its narcissism.

Let us now consider the phobia. It came into existence on the level of the genital organization, and shows us the relatively simple mechanism of an anxiety-hysteria. The ego, by developing anxiety, was protecting itself against what it regarded as an overwhelming danger, namely, homosexual satisfaction. But the process of repression left behind a trace which cannot be overlooked. The object to which the dangerous sexual aim had been attached had to have its place taken in consciousness by another one. What became conscious was fear not of the wolf, but of the father but of the wolf. Nor did the process stop at the formation of a phobia with a single content. A considerable time afterwards the wolf was replaced by the lion [p. 39]. Simultaneously with sadistic impulses against small animals there was a phobia directed towards them, in their capacity of representatives of the boy's rivals, the possible small children. The origin of the butterfly phobia is of especial interest. It was like a repetition of the mechanism that produced the wolf phobia in the dream. Owing to a chance stimulus an old experience, the scene with Grusha, was activated; her threat of castration thus produced deferred effects, though at the time it was uttered it had made no impression.1

1 The Grusha scene was, as I have said, a spontaneous product of the patient's memory, and no construction or stimulation by the physician played any part in evoking it. The gaps in it were filled up by the analysis in a fashion which must be regarded as unexceptionable, if any value at all is attached to the analytic method of work. The only possible rationalistic explanation of the phobia would be the following. There is nothing extraordinary, it might be said, in a child that was inclined to be nervous having an anxiety attack in connection with

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose


1 Die Grushasscene war, wie erwähnt, eine spontane Erinnerungsleistung des Patienten, an welcher eine Konstruktion oder Anregung des Arztes keinen Anteil hatte; die Lücke in ihr wurde von der Analyse in einer Weise ausgefüllt, die tadellos genannt werden muß, wenn man auf die Arbeitsweise der Analyse überhaupt Wert legt. Eine rationalistische Aufklärung dieser Phobie könnte nur sagen: Es sei nichts Ungewöhnliches, daß ein zur Ängstlichkeit disponiertes Kind auch einmal vor einem gelbärtigen
(IX) Recapitulations and Problems

It may truly be said that the anxiety that was concerned in the formation of these phobias was a fear of castration. This statement involves no contradiction of the view that the anxiety originated from the repression of homosexual libido. Both modes of expression refer to the same process: namely, the withdrawal of libido by the ego from the homosexual wishful impulse, the libido having then become converted into free anxiety and subsequently bound in phobias. The first method of statement merely mentions in addition the motive by which the ego was actuated.

If we look into the matter more closely we shall see that our patient's first illness (leaving the disturbance of appetite out of account) is not exhausted when we have extracted the phobia from it. It must be regarded as a true hysteria showing not merely anxiety-symptoms but also phenomena of conversion. A portion of the homosexual impulse was retained by the organ concerned in it; from that time forward, and equally during his adult life, his bowel behaved like a hysterically affected organ. The unconscious repressed homosexuality withdrew into his bowel. It was precisely this trait of hysteria which was of such great service in helping to clear up his later illness.

We must now summon up our courage to attack the still more complicated structure of the obsessional neurosis. Let us once more bear the situation in mind: a dominant masochistic a yellow-striped butterfly, probably as a result of some inherited tendency

scrubbing, to the situation in mind: a dominant masochistic a yellow-striped butterfly, probably as a result of some inherited tendency

the pail and the broom—had enough power over the patient's later life to determine his object-choice permanently and compulsively, then the butterfly phobia seems to have acquired an inexplicable importance. The state of things on this hypothesis is thus seen to be at least as remarkable as on mine, and any advantage that might be claimed for a rationalistic reading of the scene has melted away. The Grusha scene is of particular value to us, since in relation to it we can prepare our judgement upon the less certain primal scene.

1 [Freud's subsequent change of view on the relation between repression and anxiety is explained in his Inhibitions, Symptoms and Anxiety (1926d), especially in Chapter IV and Chapter XI, A (b).]

Man kann sagen, die Angst, welche in die Bildung dieser Phobien eingegangen, ist Kastrationsangst. Diese Aussage enthält keinen Widerspruch gegen die Auffassung, die Angst sei aus der Verdrängung homosexueller Libido hervorgegangen. In beiden Ausdrucksweisen meint man den nämlichen Vorgang, daß das Ich der homosexuellen Wunschregung Libido entzieht, welche in freischwebende Angst umgesetzt wird und sich dann in Phobien binden läßt. In der ersten Ausdrucksweise hat man nur das Motiv, welches das Ich treibt, mitbezeichnet.


Nun soll es uns auch nicht am Mute mangeln, die noch komplizierteren Verhältnisse der Zwangsnervose in Angriff zu nehmen. Halten wir uns nochmals die Situation vor: eine herrschende masochistische und eine Schmetterling einen Angstangriff bekommt, wahrscheinlich infolge einer erbten Angstneigung. (Vgl. Stanley Hall, A Synthetic Genetic Study of Fear, 1914.) In Unwissenheit der true causation of his fear, this explanation would proceed, the patient looked about for something in his childhood to which he could connect it; he made use of the chance similarity of names and the recurrence of the stripes as a ground for the construction of an imaginary adventure with the nursery-maid whom he still remembered. When, however, we observe that the trivial details of this event (which, according to this view, was in itself an innocent one)—the scrubbing, the pail and the broom—had enough power over the patient's later life to determine his object-choice permanently and compulsively, then the butterfly phobia seems to have acquired an inexplicable importance. The state of things on this hypothesis is thus seen to be at least as remarkable as on mine, and any advantage that might be claimed for a rationalistic reading of the scene has melted away. The Grusha scene is of particular value to us, since in relation to it we can prepare our judgement upon the less certain primal scene.

1 [Seine spätere Meinungsänderung hinsichtlich der Beziehung zwischen Verdrängung und Angst erklärt Freud in Hemmung, Symptom und Angst (1926 d), besonders in den Kapiteln IV und XI, A (b).]
sexual current and a repressed homosexual one, and an ego
deep in hysterical repudiation of them. What processes trans-
formed this condition into one of obsessional neurosis?

The transformation did not occur spontaneously, through
internal development, but through an outside influence. Its
visible effect was that the patient's relation to his father, which
stood in the foreground, and which had so far found expression
in the wolf phobia, was now manifested in obsessional piety. I
cannot refrain from pointing out that the course of events in
this part of the patient's history affords an unmistakable con-
firmation of an assertion which I made in Totem and Taboo upon
the relation of the totem animal to the deity.1 I there decided in
favour of the view that the idea of God was not a development
from the totem, but replaced it after arising independently from
a root common to both ideas. The totem, I maintained, was the
first father-surgegate, and the god was a later one, in which the
father had regained his human shape. And we find the same
thing with our patient. In his wolf phobia he had gone through
the stage of the totemic father-surgegate; but that stage was
now broken off, and, as a result of new relations between him
and his father, was replaced by a phase of religious piety.

The influence that provoked this transformation was the
acquaintance which he obtained through his mother's agency
with the doctrines of religion and with the Bible story. This
educational measure had the desired effect. The sadistic-
masochistic sexual organization came slowly to an end, the wolf
phobia quickly vanished, and, instead of sexuality being re-
pudiated with anxiety, a higher method of suppressing it made
its appearance. Piety became the dominant force in the child's
life. These victories, however, were not won without struggles,
of which his blasphemous thoughts were an indication, and of
which the establishment of an obsessive exaggeration of religious
ceremonial was the result.

Apart from these pathological phenomena, it may be said
that in the present case religion achieved all the aims for the
sake of which it is included in the education of the individual.
It put a restraint on his sexual impulses by affording them a
sublimation and a safe mooring; it lowered the importance of
his family relationships, and thus protected him from the threat
of isolation by giving him access to the great community of man-

1 Totem and Taboo (1912–13), Standard Ed., 13, 148.

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose

weidränge homosexuelle Sexualströmung, dagegen ein in hysterischer
Ablehnung befangenes Ich; welche Vorgänge wandeln diesen Zustand in
der Zwangsneurose um?

Die Verwandlung geschieht nicht spontan, durch innere Fortentwick-

lungen, sondern durch fremden Einfluß von außen. Ihr sichtbarer Erfolg
ist, daß das im Vordergrund stehende Verhältnis zum Vater, welches
bisher in der Wolfssphobie Ausdruck gefunden hatte, sich nun in Zangs-
frömmigkeit äußert. Ich kann es nicht unterlassen, darauf hinzuweisen,
 daß der Vorgang bei diesem Patienten eine unzweideutige Bestätigung
einer Behauptung liefert, die ich in Totem und Tabu über das Verhältnis
des Totentieres zur Gottheit aufgestellt habe. Ich entschied mich dort
für, daß die Gottesvorstellung nicht eine Fortentwicklung des Totem
sei, sondern sich unabhängig von ihm aus der gemeinsamen Wurzel
beider zu seiner Ablösung erhebe. Der Totem sei der erste Vatersatz,
der Gott aber ein späterer, in dem der Vater seine menschliche Gestalt
wiedergewinne. So finden wir es auch bei unserem Patienten. Er macht
in der Wolfssphobie das Stadium des totemistischen Vatersatzes durch,
welches nun abbricht und infolge neuer Relationen zwischen ihm und
dem Vater durch eine Phase von religiöser Frömmigkeit ersetzt wird.

Der Einfluß, welcher diese Wandlung hervorruft, ist die durch die Mutter
vermittelte Bekanntschaft mit den Lehren der Religion und mit der
heiligen Geschichte. Das Ergebnis wird das von der Erziehung ge-
wünschte. Der sadistisch-masochistischen Sexualorganisation wird ein
langsames Ende bereitet, die Wolfssphobie verschwinden rasch, an Stelle
der Angstabhängigkeit der Sexualität tritt eine höhere Form der Unter-
drückung derselben. Die Frömmigkeit wird zur herrschenden Macht im
Leben des Kindes. Allein diese Überwindungen gehen nicht ohne Kämpfe
vor sich, als deren Zeichen die blasphemischen Gedanken erscheinen
und als deren Folge eine zwanghafte Übertreibung des religiösen Zeremo-
niells sich festsetzt.

Wenn wir von diesen pathologischen Phänomenen absehen, können wir
sagen, die Religion hat in diesem Falle alles das geleistet, wofür sie in
der Erziehung des Individuums eingesetzt wird. Sie hat seine Sexual-
strebungen gebändigt, indem sie ihnen eine Sublimierung und feste Ver-
ankerung bot, seine familiären Beziehungen entwertet und damit eine
drohende Isolierung vorgebeugt, dadurch, daß sie ihm den Anschluß
an die große Gemeinschaft der Menschen eröffnete.

# Totem und Tabu [1912–13]. Aufsatz IV (6), am Anfang].

224
kind. The untamed and fear-ridden child became social, well-behaved, and amenable to education.

The chief motive force of the influence which religion had on him was his identification with the figure of Christ, which came particularly easily to him owing to the accident of the date of his birth. Along this path his extravagant love of his father, which had made the repression necessary, found its way at length to an ideal sublimation. As Christ, he could love his father, who was now called God, with a fervour which had not the same suddenness of impact; for in this instance there was an incomparable sublimation, without much renunciation of the instinctual, in the story of the Passion of Christ, who, at the behest of his divine Father and in his honour, had let himself be ill-treated and sacrificed. So it was that religion did its work for the hard-pressed child—by the combination which it afforded the believer of satisfaction, of sublimation, of diversion from sensual processes to purely spiritual ones, and of access to social relationships.

The opposition which he at first offered to religion had three different points of origin. To begin with, there was, in general, his characteristic (which we have seen exemplified already) of fending off all novelties. Any position of the libido which he had once taken up was obstinately defended by him from fear of what he would lose by giving it up and from distrust of the probability of a complete substitute being afforded by the new position that was in view. This is an important and fundamental psychological peculiarity, which I described in my Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality (1905d) as a susceptibility to 'fixation'.

Under the name of psychical ‘inertia’ Jung has attempted to erect it into the principal cause of all the failures of neurotics. I think he is wrong in this; for this factor has a far more general

Zusammenfassungen und Probleme


1 [Die Bedeutung der Religion für das Individuum wird ferner in Die Zukunft einer Illusion (1927 c) diskutiert.] 
2 [Drei Absätze vor Schluss dieser Arbeit.]
application and plays an important part in the lives of the non-neurotic as well. Great mobility or sluggishness of libidinal catheces (as well as of other kinds of energetic catheces) are special characteristics which attach to many normal people and by no means to all neurotics, and which have hitherto not been brought into relation with other qualities. They are, as it were, like prime numbers, not further divisible. We only know one thing about them, and that is that mobility of the mental catheces is a quality which shows striking diminution with the advance of age. This has given us one of the indications of the limits within which psycho-analytic treatment is effective. There are some people, however, who retain this mental plasticity far beyond the usual age-limit, and others who lose it very prematurely. If the latter are neurotics, we make the unwelcome discovery that it is impossible to undo developments in them which, in apparently similar circumstances, have been easily dealt with in other people. So that in considering the conversion of psychical energy no less than of physical, we must make use of the concept of an entropy, which opposes the undoing of what has already occurred.  

A second point of attack was afforded by the circumstance that religious doctrine is itself based upon a by no means unambiguous relation to God the Father, and in fact bears the stamp of the ambivalent attitude which presided over its origin. The patient's own ambivalence, which he possessed in a high degree of development, helped him to detect the same feature in religion, and he brought to bear on that feature those acute powers of criticism whose presence could not fail to astonish us in a child of four and a half.

But there was a third factor at work, which was certainly the most important of all, and to the operation of which we must ascribe the pathological products of his struggle against religion. The truth was that the mental current which impelled him to turn to men as sexual objects and which should have been

1 [Entropy is the force which, according to the Second Law of Thermodynamics, tends to make certain physical changes irreversible.—The topic of 'psychical inertia' was discussed by Freud at the end of his paper on 'A Case of Paranoia Running Counter to the Psycho-Analytic Theory of the Disease' (1915]). Though this was published earlier than the present case history, it was probably written later. An Editor's footnote at the end of that paper gives a number of references to other passages in which Freud considered the same topic.]

Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose


Einen zweiten Angriffspunkt bot ihm die Tatsache, daß die Religionslehre selbst kein eindeutiges Verhältnis zu Gott-Vater zu ihrer Grundlage hat, sondern von den Anzeichen der ambivalenten Einstellung durchsetzt ist, welche über ihrer Entstehung gewaltet hat. Diese Ambivalenz spürte er mit der hochentwickelten eigenen heraus und knüpfte an sie jene scharfsinnige Kritik, welche uns von einem Kinde im fünften Lebensjahr so sehr Wunder nehmen mußte.

Am bedeutsamsten war aber gewiß ein drittes Moment, auf dessen Wirkung wir die pathologischen Ergebnisse seines Kampfes gegen die Religion zurückführen dürfen. Die zum Manne drängende Strömung, welche von der Religion subli-
sublimated by religion was no longer free; a portion of it was cut off by repression and so withdrawn from the possibility of sublimation and tied to its original sexual aim. In virtue of this state of things, the repressed portion kept making efforts to forge its way through to the sublimated portion or to drag down the latter to itself. The first ruminations which he wove round the figure of Christ already involved the question whether that sublime son could also fulfill the sexual relationship to his father which the patient had retained in his unconscious. The only result of his repudiation of these efforts was the production of apparently blasphemous obsessive thoughts, in which his physical affection for God asserted itself in the form of a debasement. A violent defensive struggle against these compromises then inevitably led to an obsessive exaggeration of all the activities which are prescribed for giving expression to piety and a pure love of God. Religion won in the end, but its instinctual foundations proved themselves to be incomparably stronger than the durability of the products of their sublimation. As soon as the course of events presented him with a new father-surrogate, who threw his weight into the scale against religion, it was dropped and replaced by something else. Let us further bear in mind, as an interesting complication, that his piety originated under the influence of women (his mother and his nurse), while it was a masculine influence that set him free from it.

The origin of this obsessional neurosis on the basis of the sadistic-anal organization confirms on the whole what I have said elsewhere on the predisposition to obsessional neurosis (1913i). The previous existence, however, of a severe hysteria in the present case makes it more obscure in this respect.

I will conclude my survey of the patient's sexual development by giving some brief glimpses of its later vicissitudes. During the years of puberty a markedly sensual, masculine current, with a sexual aim suitable to the genital organization, made its appearance in him; it must be regarded as normal, and its history occupied the period up to the time of his later illness. It was connected directly with the Grusha scene, from which it borrowed its characteristic feature—a compulsive falling in love that came on and passed off by sudden fits. This current had to struggle against the inhibitions that were derived from his infantile neurosis. There had been a violent revulsion in the direction of women, and he had thus won his way to complete


Die Entstehung der Zwangsneurose auf dem Boden der sadistisch-analen Sexualorganisation bestätigt im ganzen, was ich an anderer Stelle über die Disposition zur Zwangsneurose (1913f) ausgeführt habe. Aber der vorherige Bestand einer starken Hysterie macht unseren Fall in dieser Hinsicht undurchsichtiger.

Ich will die Übersicht über die Sexualentwicklung unseres Kranken beschließen, indem ich ein kurzes Streiflicht auf deren spätere Wandlungen werfe. Mit den Pubertasjahren trat bei ihm die normal zu nennende, stark sinnliche, männliche Strömung mit dem Sexualziel der Genitalorganisation auf, deren Schicksale die Zeit bis zu seiner Späterkrankung füllen. Sie knüpfte direkt an die Grushaszenen an, entlehnte von ihr den Charakter zwanghafter, anfallsweise kommender und schwindender Verliebtheit und hatte mit den Hemmungen zu kämpfen, die von den Resten der infantilen Neurosen ausgegangen. Mit einem gewaltigen Durchbruch zum Weib hatte er sich endlich die volle
masculinity. From that time forward he retained women as his sexual object; but he did not enjoy this possession, for a powerful, and now entirely unconscious, inclination towards men, in which were united all the forces of the earlier phases of his development, was constantly drawing him away from his female objects and compelling him in the intervals to exaggerate his dependence upon women. He kept complaining during the treatment that he could not bear having to do with women, and all our labours were directed towards disclosing to him his unconscious relation to men. The whole situation might be summarized in the shape of a formula. His childhood had been marked by a wavering between activity and passivity, his puberty by a struggle for masculinity, and the period after he had fallen ill by a fight for the object of his masculine desires. The precipitating cause of his neurosis was not one of the types of onset which I have been able to put together as special cases of 'frustration', and it thus draws attention to a gap in that classification. He broke down after an organic affection of the genitals had revived his fear of castration, shattered his narcissism, and compelled him to abandon his hope of being personally favoured by destiny. He fell ill, therefore, as the result of a narcissistic 'frustration'. This excessive strength of his narcissism was in complete harmony with the other indications of an inhibited sexual development: with the fact that so few of his psychical trends were concentrated in his heterosexual object-choice, in spite of all its energy, and that his homosexual attitude, standing so much nearer to narcissism, persisted in him as an unconscious force with such very great tenacity. Naturally, where disturbances like these are present, psycho-analytic treatment cannot bring about any instantaneous revolution or put matters upon a level with a normal development: it can only get rid of the obstacles and clear the path, so that the influences of life may be able to further development along better lines.

I shall now bring together some peculiarities of the patient's mentality which were revealed by the psycho-analytic treatment but were not further elucidated and were accordingly not susceptible to direct influence. Such were his tenacity of fixation, which has already been discussed, his extraordinary propensity to ambivalence, and (as a third trait in a constitution which deserves the name of archaic) his power of maintaining

1 "Types of Onset of Neurosis" (1912c).
simultaneously the most various and contradictory libidinal cathexes, all of them capable of functioning side by side. His constant wavering between these (a characteristic which for a long time seemed to block the way to recovery and progress in the treatment) dominated the clinical picture during his adult illness, which I have scarcely been able to touch upon in these pages. This was undoubtedly a trait belonging to the general character of the unconscious, which in his case had persisted into the products of affective impulses; in the region of pure logic he betrayed, on the contrary, a peculiar skill in unearthing contradictions and inconsistencies. So it was that his mental life impressed one in much the same way as the religion of Ancient Egypt, which is so unintelligible to us because it preserves the earlier stages of its development side by side with the end-products, retains the most ancient gods and their attributes along with the most modern ones, and thus, as it were, spreads out upon a two-dimensional surface what other instances of evolution show us in the solid.

I have now come to the end of what I had to say about this case. There remain two problems, of the many that it raises, which seem to me to deserve special emphasis. The first relates to the phylogenetically inherited schemata, which, like the categories of philosophy, are concerned with the business of ‘placing’ the impressions derived from actual experience. I am inclined to take the view that they are precipitates from the history of human civilization. The Oedipus complex, which comprises a child’s relation to his parents, is one of them—is, in fact, the best known member of the class. Wherever experiences fail to fit in with the hereditary schema, they become remodelled in the imagination—a process which might very profitably be followed out in detail. It is precisely such cases that are calculated to convince us of the independent existence of the schema. We are often able to see the schema triumphing over the experience of the individual; as when in our present case the boy’s father became the castrator and the menace of his infantile sexuality in spite of what was in other respects an inverted Oedipus complex. A similar process is at work where a nurse comes to play the mother’s part or where the two become fused together. The contradictions between experience and the

I have now come to the end of what I had to say about this case. There remain two problems, of the many that it raises, which seem to me to deserve special emphasis. The first relates to the phylogenetically inherited schemata, which, like the categories of philosophy, are concerned with the business of ‘placing’ the impressions derived from actual experience. I am inclined to take the view that they are precipitates from the history of human civilization. The Oedipus complex, which comprises a child’s relation to his parents, is one of them—is, in fact, the best known member of the class. Wherever experiences fail to fit in with the hereditary schema, they become remodelled in the imagination—a process which might very profitably be followed out in detail. It is precisely such cases that are calculated to convince us of the independent existence of the schema. We are often able to see the schema triumphing over the experience of the individual; as when in our present case the boy’s father became the castrator and the menace of his infantile sexuality in spite of what was in other respects an inverted Oedipus complex. A similar process is at work where a nurse comes to play the mother’s part or where the two become fused together. The contradictions between experience and the

schema seem to supply the conflicts of childhood with an abundance of material.

The second problem is not far removed from the first, but it is incomparably more important. If one considers the behaviour of the four-year-old child towards the re-activated primal scene, or even if one thinks of the far simpler reactions of the one-and-a-half-year-old child when the scene was actually experienced, it is hard to dismiss the view that some sort of hardly definable knowledge, something, as it were, preparatory to an understanding, was at work in the child at the time. We can form no conception of what this may have consisted in; we have nothing at our disposal but the single analogy—and it hardly is of the four-year-old child towards the re-activated primal scene. The significance of the traumas of early childhood would lie in their contributing to an understanding, was at work in the child at the time. If human beings too possessed an instinctive endowment such as this, it would not be surprising that it should be very particularly concerned with the processes of sexual life, even though it could not be by any means confined to them. This instinctive factor would then be the nucleus of the unconscious, a primitive kind of mental activity, which would later be dethroned and overlaid by human reason, when that faculty came to be acquired, but which in some people, perhaps in every one, would retain the power of drawing down to it the higher mental processes. Repression would be the return to this instinctive stage, and man would thus be paying for his great new acquisition with his liability to neurosis, and would be bearing witness by the possibility of the neuroses to the existence of those earlier, instinct-like, preliminary stages. The significance of the traumas of early childhood would lie in their contributing material to this unconscious which would save it from being worn away by the subsequent course of development.

1 I may disregard the fact that it was not possible to put this behaviour into words until twenty years afterwards; for all the effects that we traced back to the scene had already been manifested in the form of symptoms, obsessions, etc., in the patient's childhood and long before the analysis. It is also a matter of indifference in this connection whether we choose to regard it as a primal scene or as a primal phantasy.

2 I must once more emphasize the fact that these reflections would be vain if the dream and the neurosis had not themselves occurred in infancy.

3 [The German word used here and in what follows is 'instinktiv' not 'trübhaft', which is regularly translated 'instinctual'.]
I am aware that expression has been given in many quarters to thoughts like these, which emphasize the hereditary, phylogenetically acquired factor in mental life. In fact, I am of opinion that people have been far too ready to find room for them and ascribe importance to them in psycho-analysis. I consider that they are only admissible when psycho-analysis strictly observes the correct order of precedence, and, after forcing its way through the strata of what has been acquired by the individual, comes at last upon traces of what has been inherited.  

1 (Footnote added 1923:) I will once more set out here the chronology of the events mentioned in this case history.

Born on Christmas Day.

1½ years old: Malaria. Observation of his parents copulating; or observation of them when they were together, into which he later introduced a phantasy of them copulating.

Just before 2¼: Scene with Grusha.

2¼: Screen memory of his parents' departure with his sister. This showed him alone with his Nanya and so disowned Grusha and his sister.

Before 3½: His mother's laments to the doctor.

3½: Beginning of his seduction by his sister. Soon afterwards the threat of castration from his Nanya.

4: The English governess. Beginning of the change in his character.


4½: Influence of the Bible story. Appearance of the obsessional symptoms.

Just before 5: Hallucination of the loss of his finger.

5: Departure from the first estate.

After 6: Visit to his sick father [compulsion to breathe out].

8: Final outbreaks of the obsessional neurosis.

10½: Breakdown, precipitated by gonorrhoea.

[17: Breakdown, precipitated by gonorrhoea.]

[23: Beginning of treatment.]

[The dates of the following events are not exactly established]

Between primal scene (1½) and seduction (3½): Disturbance of appetite.

Same period: Dumb water-carrier.

Before 4: Possible observation of dogs copulating.

After 4: Anxiety at swallow-tail butterfly.

It will have been easy to guess from my account that the patient was a Russian. I parted from him, regarding him as cured, a few weeks before the unexpected outbreak of the Great War [1914]; and I did not see him again until the shifting chances of the war had given the Central European Powers access to South Russia. He then came to Vienna and reported that immediately after the end of the treatment

Zusammenfassungen und Probleme

Ich weiß, daß ähnliche Gedanken, die das hereditäre, phylogenetisch erworbene Moment im Seelenleben betonen, von verschiedenen Seiten ausgesprochen worden sind, ja ich meine, daß man allzu bereit war, ihnen einen Platz in der psychoanalytischen Würdigung einzuräumen. Sie erscheinen mir erst zulässig, wenn die Psychoanalyse in Einhaltung des korrekten Instanzenzuges auf die Spuren des Ererbten gerät, nachdem sie durch die Schichtung des individuell Erworbenen hindurchgedrungen ist.

8 (Zusatz 1923:) Ich stelle hier nochmal die Chronologie der in dieser Geschichte erwähnten Begebenheiten zusammen:

Geboren am Weihnachtstag.

1½ Jahre: Malaria. Beobachtung des Koitus der Eltern oder jenes Beisammenseins derselben, in das er später die Koitusphantasie eintrug.

Kurz vor 2½ Jahren: Szene mit Grusha.

2½ Jahre: Dekkerinnerung an Abreise der Eltern mit Schwester. Sie zeigt ihm allein mit der Nanya und verleugnet so Grusha und Schwester.

Vor 3½ Jahren: Klage der Mutter vor dem Arzt.

3½ Jahren: Beginn der Verführung durch die Schwester, bald darauf Kastrationsdrohung der Nanya.


4 Jahre: Wolfstraum, Entstehung der Phobie.


Kurz vor 5 Jahren: Halluzination des Fingerverlustes.

5 Jahre: Verlassen des ersten Gutes.

Nach 6 Jahren: Besuch beim kranken Vater [Ausatmungszwang].

8 Jahre: Letzte Ausbrüche der Zwangseurose.

10 Jahre: Von der Gonorrhoe ausgelöster Zusammenbruch.

[17: Von der Gonorrhoe ausgelöster Zusammenbruch.]

[23: Beginn der Behandlung.]

[Die Daten folgender Ereignisse sind nicht exakt festzustellen:

Zwischen Urszene (1½) und Verführung (3½): Appetitstörung.

Im gleichen Zeitabschnitt: Der stumme Wasserträger.

Vor dem 4. Lebensjahr: Möglicherweise Beobachtung kopulierender Hunde.

Nach dem 4. Geburtstag: Angst vor dem Schmetterling (dem Schwabenschwanz).]

he had been seized with a longing to tear himself free from my influence. After a few months' work, a piece of the transference which had not hitherto been overcome was successfully dealt with. Since then the patient has felt normal and has behaved unexceptionably, in spite of the war having robbed him of his home, his possessions, and all his family relationships. It may be that his very misery, by gratifying his sense of guilt, contributed to the consolidation of his recovery.

[Some further notes on the later history of the case may be of interest. The original course of treatment lasted from February, 1910, to July, 1914. The patient returned to Vienna in the spring of 1919, and Freud treated him again from November, 1919, till February, 1920. In some further remarks on the case, at the beginning of his 'Analysis Terminable and Interminable' (1937c), Freud reports that after this second treatment the patient continued living in Vienna and on the whole maintained his health, though with occasional interruptions. These later episodes were dealt with, on Freud's advice, by one of his pupils, Dr. Ruth Mack Brunswick. She herself reported in detail on this later phase of the treatment, which extended from October, 1926, to February, 1927 (Brunswick, 1928). Her report was reprinted in The Psycho-Analytic Reader, edited by R. Fließ (1950), with an added note by Dr. Mack Brunswick (dated September, 1945) giving a short account of the patient's further history up to 1940. A still later report, on his great external difficulties during the Second World War, and his reaction to them, has since been published by Muriel Gardiner (1952). A full account of the case will be found in the second volume of Ernest Jones's biography (1955), pp. 306-12.]
APPENDIX

List of Freud's Longer Case Histories

The date at the beginning of each entry is approximately that of the year during which the work in question was written. The date at the end is that of publication; and under that date fuller particulars of the work will be found in the Bibliography at the end of this volume.

1894 Frau Emmy von N.
   Miss Lucy R.
   Katharina
   Fräulein Elisabeth von R.
   in Studies on Hysteria (1895d)

1901 'Fragment of an Analysis of a Case of Hysteria' ('Dora') (1905b)

1909 'Analysis of a Phobia in a Five-Year-Old Boy' ('Little Hans') (1909b and 1922c)
   'Notes upon a Case of Obsessional Neurosis' (The 'Rat Man') (1909d and 1955a)

1910 'Psycho-Analytic Notes on an Autobiographical Account of a Case of Paranoia' (Schreber) (1911c and 1912a)

1914 'From the History of an Infantile Neurosis' (The 'Wolf Man') (1918b)

1915 'A Case of Paranoia Running Counter to the Psycho-Analytic Theory of the Disease' (1915f)

1919 'The Psychogenesis of a Case of Homosexuality in a Woman' (1920a)
BIBLIOGRAPHY
AND AUTHOR INDEX

[Titles of books and periodicals are in italics; titles of papers are in inverted commas. Abbreviations are in accordance with the World List of Scientific Periodicals (London, 1952). Further abbreviations used in this volume will be found in the List at the end of this bibliography. Numerals in thick type refer to volumes; ordinary numerals refer to pages. The figures in round brackets at the end of each entry indicate the page or pages of this volume on which the work in question is mentioned. In the case of the Freud entries, the letters attached to the dates of publication are in accordance with the corresponding entries in the complete bibliography of Freud's writings to be included in the last volume of the Standard Edition.

For non-technical authors, and for technical authors where no specific work is mentioned, see the General Index.]

ABRAHAM, K. (1916) 'Untersuchungen über die früheste prägenitale Entwicklungstufe der Libido', Int. Z. Psychoan., 4, 71. (269)


BINET, A. (1888) Études de psychologie expérimentale: le féétichisme dans l'amour, Paris. (182)

BREUER, J., and FREUD, S. (1895) see FREUD, S. (1895d)


[Trans.: 'Transitory Symptom-Constructions during the Analysis', First Contributions to Psycho-Analysis, London, 1952, Chap. VII.]

FRÖNCKEI, S. (1919) 'Technische Schwierigkeiten einer Hysterianalyse', Int. Z. Psychoan., 5, 34. (162)

FRÖNCKEI, S. (1921) 'Weitere Ausbau der "aktiven Technik" in der Psychoanalyse', Int. Z. Psychoan., 7, 233. (162)


277
(1910c) 'Weitere Bemerkungen über die Abwehr-Neurypsychosen', G.S., 1, 363; G.W., 1, 379. (75)
(1910d) 'Die zukünftigen Chancen der psychoanalytischen Therapie', G.S., 6, 25; G.W., 8, 104. (158)
(1911b) 'Formulierungen über die zwei Prinzipien des psychischen Geschehens', G.S., 5, 409; G.W., 8, 230. (204)
(1911c) 'Psychoanalytische Bemerkungen über einen autobiographisch beschriebenen Fall von Paranoia (Dementia Paranoidea)', G.S., 8, 355; G.W., 8, 240. (84, 123)
(1911d) 'Ein Beitrag zum Vergessen von Eigennamen' [in 1910c from 4th ed. onwards], Zbl. Psychoan., 1, 407; G.S., 4, 37; G.W., 4, 37. (272)
(1912a) 'Nachtrag zu dem autobiographisch beschriebenen Fall von Paranoia (Dementia Paranoidea)', G.S., 8, 432; G.W., 8, 317. (123)
(1912b) 'Über neurotische Erkrankungstypen', G.S., 5, 400; G.W., 8, 322. (118, 163)
(1912c) 'Types of Onset of Neurosis', C.P., 2, 113; Standard Ed., 12.]
(1913c) 'Weitere Ratschläge zur Technik der Psychoanalyse: [1] Zur Einleitung der Behandlung', G.S., 6, 84; G.W., 8, 454. (167)
(1913d) 'Märchenstoffe in Träumen', G.S., 3, 259; G.W., 10, 2. (4, 29, 85)
280 BIBLIOGRAPHY

[Trans.: 'The Occurrence of Dreams of Material from Fairy Tales', C.P., 4, 236; Standard Ed., 12.]

(1913) 'Die Disposition zur Zwangsnervose', G.S., 5, 277; G.W., 8, 442. (64, 117, 127, 182)
[Trans.: 'The Predisposition to Obsessional Neurosis', C.P., 2, 122; Standard Ed., 12.]

(1913) 'Das Interesse an der Psychoanalyse', G.S., 4, 313; G.W., 8, 390. (261)

(1913) 'Kindheitsträume mitspieler Bedeutung', Int. J. Psychoan., 1, 79.
[Trans.: 'Childhood Dreams with a Particular Meaning', included in 1918, Standard Ed., 17, 4.]

(1914a) 'Über fausse reconnaissance ("deja raconté") während der psychoanalytischen Arbeit', G.S., 6, 76; G.W., 10, 116. (5, 85)
[Trans.: 'Fausse Reconnaissance ("deja raconté") in Psycho-Analytic Treatment', C.P., 2, 334; Standard Ed., 13, 201.]

(1914c) 'Zur Einführung des Narzissmus', G.S., 6, 155; G.W., 10, 138. (6, 53, 129, 136, 194, 236)

(1914d) 'Zur Geschichte der psychoanalytischen Bewegung', G.S., 4, 411; G.W., 10, 44. (7, 23, 164)
[Trans.: 'On the History of the Psycho-Analytic Movement', C.P., 1, 287; Standard Ed., 14.]

(1914g) 'Weitere Ratschläge zur Technik der Psychoanalyse: II. Erinnern, Wiederholen und Durcharbeiten', G.S., 6, 109; G.W., 10, 126. (159, 239)
[Trans.: 'Recollecting, Repeating and Working Through (Further Recommendations on the Technique of Psycho-Analyse, II)', C.P., 2, 366; Standard Ed., 12.]

(1915a) 'Weitere Ratschläge zur Technik der Psychoanalyse: III. Bemerkungen über die Übertragungsliebe', G.S., 6, 120; G.W., 10, 306. (162)
[Trans.: 'Observations on Transference-Love (Further Recommendations on the Technique of Psycho-Analysis, III)', C.P., 2, 377; Standard Ed., 12.]

(1915b) 'Zeitgemässes über Krieg und Tod', G.S., 10, 315; G.W., 10, 324. (242)
[Trans.: 'Thoughts for the Times on War and Death', C.P., 4, 288; Standard Ed., 14.]

(1915c) 'Trieb- und Triebchicksale', G.S., 5, 443; G.W., 10, 210. (26, 106, 194)
[Trans.: 'Instincts and their Vicissitudes', C.P., 4, 60; Standard Ed., 14.]

(1915d) 'Die Verdrängung', G.S., 5, 466; G.W., 10, 248. (5, 178)
[Trans.: 'Repression', C.P., 4, 84; Standard Ed., 14.]

(1915e) 'Das Unbewusste', G.S., 5, 480; G.W., 10, 264. (10, 81, 178)

(1915f) 'Mitteilung eines der psychoanalytischen Theorie widersprechenden Falles von Paranoia', G.S., 5, 288; G.W., 10, 234. (116, 123)
[Trans.: 'A Case of Paranoia Running Counter to the Psycho-Analytic Theory of the Disease', C.P., 2, 150; Standard Ed., 14.]

(1916d) 'Einige Charaktertypen aus der psychoanalytischen Arbeit', G.S., 10, 287; G.W., 10, 364. (28)
[Trans.: 'Some Character-Types Met with in Psycho-Analytic Work', C.P., 4, 318; Standard Ed., 14.]

(1916-17) Vorlesungen zur Einführung in die Psychoanalyse, Vienna. G.S., 7; G.W., 11. (5, 7, 57, 60, 97, 196, 159, 193)

(1917a) 'Eine Schwierigkeit der Psychoanalyse', G.S., 10, 347; G.W., 12, 3. (98)
[Trans.: 'A Difficulty in the Path of Psycho-Analysis', C.P., 4, 347; Standard Ed., 17, 137.]

(1917b) 'Eine Kindheitserinnerung aus Dichtung und Wahrheit', G.S., 10, 357; G.W., 12, 15.
[Trans.: 'A Childhood Recollection from Dichtung und Wahrheit', C.P., 4, 357; Standard Ed., 17, 147.]

(1917c) 'Über Triebumsetzungen insbesondere der Analerotik', G.S., 5, 268; G.W., 10, 402. (5, 80)
[Trans.: 'On Transformations of Instinct, as Exemplified in Anal Erotism', C.P., 2, 164; Standard Ed., 17, 127.]

(1917e) 'Trauer und Melancholie', G.S., 5, 535; G.W., 10, 428. (6)
[Trans.: 'Mourning and Melancholia', C.P., 4, 152; Standard Ed., 14.]

(1918) [1914] 'Aus der Geschichte einer infantilen Neurose', G.S., 8, 439; G.W., 12, 29. (123, 126, 166, 175, 198, 201, 244)
[Trans.: 'From the History of an Infantile Neurosis', C.P., 3, 473; Standard Ed., 17, 3.]

(1919a [1918]) 'Wege der psychoanalytischen Therapie', G.S., 6, 136; G.W., 12, 183.
[Trans.: 'Lines of Advance in Psycho-Analytic Therapy', C.P., 2, 392; Standard Ed., 17, 159.]

(1919b) 'James J. Putnam', G.S., 11, 276; G.W., 12, 315.

(1919c) 'Internationaler psychoanalytischer Verlag und Preiszuteilungen für psychoanalytische Arbeiten', G.W., 12, 333.

(1919d) Einleitung zu Zur Psychoanalyse der Kriegsneurosen, Vienna. G.S., 11, 252; G.W., 12, 321.
[Trans.: Introduction to Psycho-Analysis and the War Neuroses, London and New York, 1921, C.P., 5, 83; Standard Ed., 17, 207.]
BIBLIOGRAPHY

(1955c [1920]) 'Memorandum on the Electrical Treatment of War Neuroses', Standard Ed., 17, 211. (206)
[German Text (unpublished): 'Gutachten über die elektrische Behandlung der Kriegsneurotiker'.]


HAu., G. S. (1914) 'A Synthetic Genetic Study of Fear', Amer. J. Psychol., 25, 149. (113)

HITSCHMANN, E. (1913) 'Weitere Mitteilung von Kindheitstraumen mit spezieller Bedeutung', Int. Z. Psychoan., 1, 476. (4)


JONES, ERNEST (1914) 'Die Stellungnahme des psychoanalytischen Arztes zu den aktuellen Konflikten', Int. Z. Psychoan., 2, 6. (165)

(1919) 'Professor Dr. James Jackson Putnam', Int. Z. Psychoan., 5, 235. (271)
[English Text: 'Dr. James Jackson Putnam', Int. J. Psycho-Anal., 1 (1920), 6.]


JUNG, C. G. (1917) Die Psychologie der unbewussten Prozesse, Zurich. (97)

KAMMERER, P. (1919) Das Gesetz der Serie, Vienna. (238)


OPHUISSEN, J. H. W. VAN (1917) 'Beiträge zum Männlichkeitskomplex der Frau', Int. Z. Psychoan., 4, 241. (191)


(1912b) Das Inzestmotive in Dichtung und Sage, Vienna. (261)

(1914) 'Der Doppelgänger', Imago, 3, 97. (234-6)

(1926) Technik der Psychoanalyse I. Die analytische Situation, Vienna. (47)

RANK, O., and SACHS, H. (1913) Die Bedeutung der Psychoanalyse für die Geisteswissenschaften, Wiesbaden. (261)
[Trans.: The Significance of Psychoanalysis for the Mental Sciences, New York, 1916.]

REIK, T. (1915-16) 'Die Pubertätsriten der Wilden', Imago, 4, 125 and 189. (269)
LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

G.S. = Freud, Gesammelte Schriften (12 vols.), Vienna, 1924–34
G.W. = Freud, Gesammelte Werke (18 vols.), London, from 1940
S.K.S.N. = Freud, Sammlung kleiner Schriften zur Neurosenlehre (5 vols.), Vienna, 1906–22

Dichtung und Kunst = Freud, Psychoanalytische Studien an Werken der Dichtung und Kunst, Vienna, 1924
Neurosenlehre und Technik = Freud, Schriften zur Neurosenlehre und zur psychoanalytischen Technik (1913–1926), Vienna, 1931
Psychoanalyse der Neurosen = Freud, Studien zur Psychoanalyse der Neurosen aus den Jahren 1913–1926, Vienna, 1926
Sexualtheorie und Traumlehre = Freud, Kleine Schriften zur Sexualtheorie und zur Traumlehre, Vienna, 1931
Technik und Metapsychol. = Freud, Zur Technik der Psychoanalyse und zur Metapsychologie, Vienna, 1924
This index includes the names of non-technical authors. It also includes the names of technical authors where no reference is made in the text to specific works. For references to specific technical works, the Bibliography should be consulted. — The compilation of the index was undertaken by Mrs. R. S. Partridge.

Abraham, 66
Abraham, K. (see also Bibliography), 206, 209, 270
Active technique in psycho-analysis, 158, 162–6
Active and passive (see also Passive sexual aim), 26–7, 46, 109, 118, 190
relation to masculine and feminine, 47, 111–12
Adam, 68
Adler, A., 5, 7 n., 22, 53, 102, 103 n., 110–11, 177–8, 201–3
Aesthetics, 219–20, 247, 251
Affect displacement of, 73
transformation of, 36, 241
Aggressiveness, 19–20
Agoraphobia, 166
Also Sprach Zarathustra (Nietzsche), 234 n.
Ambivalence, 32, 118, 232 n., 243
in sense of activity and passivity, 26
of religion, 65–6, 116
Anagogic phantasies, 102
Anal erotism (see also Sadistic-anal organization), 5, 26, 41, 46 n., 66, 72, 84, 108, 127–33
and character-traits, 127–8
and money, 72, 127, 130–1
defiance expressed by, 76–7, 81, 108, 130, 132–3
homosexuality expressed by, 78, 83–4, 113
Anal theory
of birth, 102, 131, 133
of sexual intercourse, 78–80, 84, 95
Anal zone as organ of passive homosexuality, 78
Analogies
absolute ruler, 143
amoeba, 139
chemical analysis, 138, 160–1
enemy army, rate of progress of, 12
Analogies—cont.
origins of great nation, 20
religion of Ancient Egypt, 119
whale and polar bear, 48
Andersen, Hans, 246
Animal phobias (see also Butterfly; Caterpillar; Horse; Lion; Wolf), 5, 8, 16, 32, 98–9
Animals
and pregenital phase in man, 108
as parent-surrogates, 98
as symbols for children, 109
as totems, 114, 140
children's relation to, 98, 140
copulation of, observed by children, 57–9, 95–7, 121 n.
cruelty to, 16, 26, 63, 68–9, 109, 112, 150
instinct in, 120
man's relation to, 140–1
Animism, 240–1, 243–4, 246, 248–50
Anorexia, 98–9, 106–7, 113, 121 n.
in girls, at puberty, 106
Anxiety, neurotic (see also Fear; Phobia)
and narcissistic libido, 210
and oral phase, 107
and sadistic-anal phase, 109
bogies seen in states of, 67
caused by repressed homosexual libido, 46, 112–13
infantile, 252
'Wolf Man's', connected with butterfly, 89, 91, 96, 112 n
'Wolf Man's', following wolf-dream, 28, 46, 61, 64, 66, 77, 101–2, 111–12
Anxiety-dream (see Wolf-dream)
Anxiety-hysteria, 8, 112
Apathy, 11
Appetite, loss of (see Anorexia)
Aristarchus of Samos, 140
Art, 140, 261
and psycho-analysis, 173
Attention, 50, 90
Budapest
Psycho-Analytical Congress of 1918 in, 156, 170, 266-7, 215, 267, 275
Burial alive, fear of, 244

Butterfly
as symbol for female genitals, 89-91

Cannibalism, 6, 64, 106-8
Caterpillar
as symbol for female genitals, 89-91

Childhood impressions
and aetiology of neuroses, 49-50, 54-5, 97
and family traditions, 14, 14 n. 2
and genesis of sexual aberrations, 182, 193, 198
attributed to analyst, 52
of Goethe, 146-56
reality or phantasy, 49-60, 95-7, 103 n.
significance of, 49-50, 54-5, 148-149, 183-4, 259

Children (see also Infanticide) and animals, 98, 140
and dolls, 233
distinction between Ca. and Ucs.
in, 104-5
dreams of, 4-5, 9
fear of the dark in, 246-7, 252
narcissism of, 27, 139, 235
naughtiness in, 28, 89, 152, 154-5
persons of, rated too low, 103
psycho-analysis of, 9, 183
reaction to prohibitions by, 69
sexual researches of, 25, 34, 37 n.
6, 43 n., 65, 70, 82, 108-9, 131, 133

Circumcision and castration complex, 86, 87 n. 2, 88
Civilization, 119, 140, 260-3
Clara (in Hoffmann's Sand-Man), 229, 231-2
Cloacal theory
Birth, infantile theories of
Clorinda (in Jerusalemæ Liberæ), 86 n.
Coincidence, 237-40, 247-8
Coitus a tergo, 37-9, 41, 47, 55-7, 59, 92-3
Compassion, narcissistic origin of, 88
Complicating instincts, 26, 182, 189, 191
Compromise formation, 66, 83
Compulsion to repeat, 218, 234, 239

Compulsions (see Obsessional acts)
Compulsive falling in love, conditions for, 41, 57, 91-4, 117

Conflict
between instincts, 138, 141-3, 208, 260
between ego and libido, 110
solution of, by psycho-analysis, 159, 162
within the ego, 208-9

Conscience, 233 (see also Ego-ideal; Superego)
Conscious system, 78-9, 104-5

Consciousness
admissibility of, 185, 188, 190, 199
as organ of internal perception, 141-3
Excise-man' (Hoffmann), 233 n.
psycho-analysis brings repression material into, 48-51, 159, 162

Constitution as neurotic symptom, 74-8, 80, 84, 113, 130
Constructions in psycho-analysis, 50-2
Conversion, hysterical, 113
copernicus, 140
Coppius, 252
Coppola, Giuseppe
Coping (see Psycho-Analytical Congress of 1918 in)
Critical system

Castration
acceptance of, by 'Wolf Man', 36, 42, 44 n., 45-6, 57, 78, 85, 100, 109-10
defaecation as prototype of, 84, 139
in prehistoric times, 86
rejection of, by 'Wolf Man', 25, 84-5
represented by blindness, 231-3
represented by doubling of genital symbols, 235
represented by hat falling off, 19
threat, 19, 24-5, 45-6, 78, 86-97, 108, 112, 121 n., 231
Castration complex, 25, 31, 34, 79, 96, 113, 118, 231-3
and anal defiance, 133
and the uncanny, 233, 243-4, 246, 248, 252

Cathartic therapy, 203, 208
Caul as symbol, 75, 99-100

Censorship, 235
Character
and 'masculine protest', 201
associated with anal erotism, 127-128
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dream—cont.</th>
<th>Ego-psychotherapy, 130, 235 n. 2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>of giant caterpillar, 69-70</td>
<td>Ego-syntonic impulse, 110</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>of mutilated wasp, 94</td>
<td>Egypt, ancient, 235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>of tutor as roaring lion, 39</td>
<td>Eissler, Dr. K. R., 211 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>of undressing sister, 19-20</td>
<td>Eitzen, Max, 269-70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dream-content, manifest, 33-5, 42, 42 n. 2</td>
<td>Elective therapy, 259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dreams</td>
<td>Elixirs des Teufels, Die (by E. T. A. Hoffman), 233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and the unconscious, 259-60</td>
<td>Enema</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>another kind of remembering</td>
<td>Enuresis, 92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>can be guided, 52</td>
<td>Epilepsy, uncanniness of, 226, 243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>children's, 4-5, 9</td>
<td>Erection, 81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>displacement in, 44 n., 57-9</td>
<td>'Erich', little, 154-5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>distortion in, 34-5, 42 n. 2</td>
<td>Evil, problem of, 62-3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>functional phenomena in, 194</td>
<td>Evil eye, 240, 243 n. 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>representation by opposite, in, 34-35, 42 n.</td>
<td>Ewers, H. H., 236 n. 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sense of reality in, 33-4, 51</td>
<td>Exhibitionism, 76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>symbolism in, 37 n. 2, 82 n. 2, 128, 231, 235</td>
<td>External world (see also Reality), 141-2, 236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wish-fulfilment in, 35-6, 44 n.</td>
<td>Eye as sexual symbol, 231-3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>women's, after first experience of</td>
<td>Faeces (see also Constipation; Defaecation)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sexual intercourse, 130</td>
<td>as gift, 81-2, 108, 128, 130-3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dream-thoughts, latent, 33, 42, 42 n. 2</td>
<td>equated with baby, 82, 84, 100-1, 128, 130-3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dream-work, 44 n.</td>
<td>equated with penis, 84, 128, 131-133</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Education, 114-15</td>
<td>incontinence of, 76-7, 80-1, 88, 92 n. 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ego</td>
<td>left by criminals on scene of crime, 81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and anal errotism, 74-5</td>
<td>modifications in significance of, 80-4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and anal erotism, 84, 100-1, 128, 130-3</td>
<td>retention of, as defiance, 130, 132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and super-ego, 194, 235</td>
<td>treated by children as parts of their own bodies, 84 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and the 'double', 235-6</td>
<td>Fairy-stories, 23, 25-29, 39-42, 140, 246, 250, 252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and war-neuroses, 209-10</td>
<td>Fat, 188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>as reservoir of libido, 138-9</td>
<td>Father as beater in beating-phantasies, 185-7, 189-90, 195-6, 198-200, 202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>conflict between instincts and, 138, 208, 260</td>
<td>as prototype of bogies, 67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>conflict within, 208-9</td>
<td>boy's identification with, 27, 63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>education of, by psycho-analysis, 142-3</td>
<td>Father—cont.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>not master in its own house, 141-143</td>
<td>boy's incestuous feeling for, 27-8, 35-6, 42, 44 n., 46-7, 63-5, 70, 78, 85-4, 100-1, 198-9, 232 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>repressive forces of, 110-14, 138, 260</td>
<td>girl's incestuous feeling for, 186, 188-9, 191, 196, 198-9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>synthetic function of, 161</td>
<td>girl's wish to have child by, 188 'good' and 'bad', 232 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ego-ideal (see also Super-ego), 6, 235 n. 2</td>
<td>killing of the primal, 262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ego-instincts, 137-9</td>
<td>Faust (Goethe), 243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ego-libido, 138-9, 209-10</td>
<td>Fear (see also Anxiety, neurotic; Phobia)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>of being watched, 194, 235</td>
<td>of being buried alive, 244</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>of the uncanny, 226-7, 230-1, 233, 246</td>
<td>of blindness, 231-2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>children and, 233</td>
<td>of the dark, 246-7, 252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Double', theme of, and the</td>
<td>of the dead, 241-3, 246-8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>uncanny, 234-7</td>
<td>of death, 34, 77, 79, 98, 107, 235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Displacement</td>
<td>of evil eye, 240, 243 n. 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in dreams, 44 n., 57-9</td>
<td>of the uncanny, 219-20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>of affect, 73</td>
<td>Feminine impulses (see Masculine and feminine)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>of libido, 84, 163</td>
<td>Ferenczi, S. (see also Bibliography), 158, 170, 177, 206-7, 218, 267-268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Distortion</td>
<td>Fetishism, 182, 192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in childhood memories, 9, 51</td>
<td>Fire, and incontinence of the bladder, 92 n. 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in dreams, 34-5, 42 n. 2</td>
<td>Fixation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in phantasies, 190</td>
<td>determinant of neurosis, 138</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dolls</td>
<td>determinant of perversion, 181-2, 192-3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and the uncanny, 226-7, 230-1, 233, 246</td>
<td>susceptibility to, 115-16, 118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>children and, 233</td>
<td>Flasc, Wilhelm, 6, 39 n., 177-8, 200 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>‘Double’, theme of, and the</td>
<td>Folklore, 268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>uncanny, 234-7</td>
<td>Free will, the illusion of, 236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doubling as symbol for castration, 235</td>
<td>Freund, Anton von, 158, 167 n., 267 n. 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doubt as weapon of the resistance, 75-6, 155 n. 2</td>
<td>Frustration as precipitating cause of neurosis, 118, 162</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dream, ‘Wolf Man’s’, (see also Wolf-dream)</td>
<td>Functional phenomena, 194</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>of coition between heavenly bodies, 87 n. 3</td>
<td>Genital organization, 47, 63-4, 108-112, 117, 127-31, 187-9, 194</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>of the Devil and snail, 69-70</td>
<td>Genitals</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dementia praecox (see also Schizophrenia), 21, 209</td>
<td>symbols for, 89-90, 129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Demon, The (by Lermontov), 69 n.</td>
<td>uncanniness of female, 245</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Demons, 235, 242</td>
<td>Gerusalemme Liberata (Tasso), 86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Depression (see also Melancholia), 6, 8, 15, 17, 21, 37</td>
<td>Geschichte von der abgehaumen Hand (by Hauff), 244 n. 1, 246, 252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>periodic, 37, 90-1, 94</td>
<td>‘Gettatore’ (in Schaffner’s Josef Monfort), 243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deutschke, F., 7 n.</td>
<td>Ghosts, 241-3, 250, 252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Devil, the, 69-70</td>
<td>Gicklhorn, Prof. J., 211 n.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Hallucination

‘Wolf Man’s’ of blood coming from tree, 85 n. 2, 85-6
‘Wolf Man’s’ of severed finger, 85-6, 121 n.

Hamlet, 12, 230, 250
‘Hans’, little, 5, 9 n., 130, 155
Harvard, 271
Haufl, W., 244, 246, 252
Heine, H., 236 n. 2
Heller, H., 7 n.

Hereditary factors (see also Phylologic inheritance), 5, 8, 21-22, 56, 112 n., 142
Hering, E., 238
Herodotus, 239 n. 1, 246, 252
Hirschman, Dr. E. (see also Bibliography), 151-2
Hoffmann, E. T. A., 227-34, 236
Holy Ghost, 66-7
Holy Trinity, 17, 68
Homer, 250

Homosexuality

and identification with women, 47, 64, 78, 81, 84, 100-1, 200
expressed by anal erotism, 78, 85-9, 100-1, 112 n.
infantile sources of, 182, 193, 198
repressed, 36, 46-7, 64-5, 70-1, 78, 80, 109-19, 199-200
sensitized in religion, 64-5, 115-16

‘Wolf Man’s’ towards his father, 27-8, 35-6, 42, 44 n., 46-7, 63-65, 70, 78, 83-4, 100-1

Horse

cruelty to, 26
phobia, 5, 16

Hug-Heilmuth, Frau Dr. von, 154-5

Hunger, 137

Hus, John, 91-2

Hydropathy, 259

Hymen, 101 n.

Hysteria, 11, 168

Hysteric, 75-6, 113-14, 117, 165, 179, 183, 261

anxiety, 8, 112

Hysterical conversion, 113

Identification, 6

with own penis, 102

with women, 47, 64, 76-9, 81-2

84, 100-1, 200

Identification,—cont.

‘Wolf Man’s’, with father, 27, 63, 67, 107-8
‘Wolf Man’s’, with Christ, 64, 66, 117

Ignatius, H., 136

Illness, flight into, 207-8, 213

Image, 267-8

Impotence, belief in, 242

Incestuous impulses (see also Oedipus complex)
boys’, for father, 27-8, 35-6, 42, 44 n., 46-7, 63-5, 70, 78, 100-1, 198-9, 232 n.
boys’, for mother, 101-2, 187-90, 203
“Wolf Man’s”, for father, 186-9, 191, 196, 198-9
for sister, 22-3
sense of guilt caused by, 115, 188-189, 194

Incorporation, 6

Infantile (see also Childhood impressions: Children)

perversions, 182, 192, 194

sexual theories of, 19, 198, 203-4

theories of birth, 25, 102, 109, 131, 133

theories of sexual intercourse, 78-80, 84, 188

Infantile neurosis, 8-9, 11, 28, 33, 54-8, 103 n., 120 n. 2
as basis of adult neurosis, 6, 54, 72, 75, 98-9, 117

Inferiority, sense of, 193-4

Inferno (Dante), 250

Insanity, uncanniness of, 226, 243

Instinctive knowledge of sexual life, 120

Institution, (see also Component instincts; Ego-instincts; Nutritional instinct; Sexual instinct)

conflict between, 138, 141-3, 208, 260

in animals, 120

repression of, 207-8, 259-60

transformation of, 127-8

Intelligence, activity impaired by, 22, 70-1

Internationaler Zeitschrift für Psychoanalyse, 267-8, 271, 274 n.

Internationaler Psychoanalytischer Verlag, 267-8

Interpretation of dreams (see Dream-interpretation)

Intestinal disorder as neurotic symptom, 74-8, 80, 84, 113

Inversion (see Homosexuality)

Jealousy of mother, 82-3, 153-4

of siblings, 17, 21-4, 82-3, 112, 149-55, 186-8

Jentsch, E. (see also Bibliography), 230, 233

Jesus Christ, 62-7, 79, 117

blasphemous thoughts about, 63-64, 79
circumcision of, 86

‘Wolf Man’s’ identification with, 64-66, 115, 117

Jews, and circumcision, 86, 88

Joining in the conversation’, by Jung, C. G. (see also Bibliography), 5, 7 n., 53-4, 100, 102, 103 n., 115

Klinger, F., 226

Krastelin, E., 8 n. 2

Kronos, 32 n.

Lermontov, M., 69 n.

Libido (see also Sexual instinct)

and aetiology of neuroses (see Neuroses, sexual aetiology of) backwater flow of, 129-30

conflict with ego, 110
development of, in man, 127
displacement of, 84, 163
diversion of, from real problems of life, 55 n. 1, 54-5
ego-, 138-9, 205-10
fixation of, 24, 26-7, 115-16, 138, 184, 186
liberation of, by psycho-analysis, 70-1, 163

object-, 139

repression of, 111, 113
Melancholia

Medical training

Matrona, 209

Masturbation

Masochistic phantasies

Masochistic neuroses; Obsessional neuroses; Transference neuroses; Traumatic neuroses; War neuroses

Memory and dreams, 51

Mephistopheles (in Faust), 243

Micturition

and fire, 92 n. 1

and infantile sexual theories, 93, 188

as attempt at seduction, 93

as expression of sexual excitement, 81, 92, 96

as gift, 91 n. 1, 130

shame attached to, 92 n. 1

Midsummer Night's Dream, 4, 230

Money

and anal erotism, 72, 127, 130-1

equated with baby, 85

equated with faces, 72-4, 76, 82, 125, 130-2

Mother

as beater in boys' beating phantasies, 189-90, 196, 198-9, 202

boys' incestuous feelings for, 187-9, 203

girls' jealousy of, 186

Munich, Psycho-Analytical Congress of 1913 at, 165 n. 1

Myths, 89 n. 1, 140, 173, 261-2

Greek, 32 n., 139, 188 n. 1, 231

Nancy, 14-15, 17

and the wolf-dream, 29, 35-6

castration threat by, 24-5, 45-6, 86 n. 2, 108, 121 n.

religious influence of, 61-3, 65, 68, 117

'Wolf Man's' attempt to seduce, 24, 27-8, 63

'Wolf Man's' naughtiness to, 15, 24, 26-7

'Wolf Man's' sister's calumnies about, 20-1, 56-7

Narcissism

and the ego, 111

and masochism, 194

and scientific research, 139-41, 193

gonorrhoea a blow to, 99, 118

of children, 27, 139, 235

of primitive man, 139, 235, 240

three blows to, 136, 139-43

transition to object-love, from, 129-30

Narcissistic libido, 209-10

Narcissistic—cont.

masculinity, 46, 64, 84, 107-8, 110-11, 118, 130

neuroses, 209

origin of compassion, 88

Narcissus, 139


Naughtiness in children, 28, 89, 152, 154-5, 180

Negation and repression, 81 n. 2

Negative reactions, in psycho-analysis, 69

Nastroy, J., 252

Neuroses (see also Infantile neurosis; Narcissistic neuroses; Obsessional neuroses; Transference neuroses; Traumatic neuroses; War neuroses)

and infantile impressions, 49-50, 54-5, 59

and phylogenetic heritage, 97, 120

curability of, 138

Oedipus complex the nucleus of, 193, 261

precipitating cause of, 7, 91 n., 99-100, 108, 129

regressive character of, 54, 128

sexual aetiology of, 138-9, 141-2, 193, 204, 208-9, 260

Netzsche, F., 234 n.

Nuremberg, Psycho-Analytical Congress of 1910 at, 138

Nurse playing mother's part, 119

Nutritional instinct, 106

Object-choice determination of, 22-4, 27, 41, 57, 91-4, 112 n., 183, 200

incestuous (see Incestuous) tendency to debase, 22-3, 93-5, 98

Object-libido, 139

Object-love, 129, 130, 139

Obsessional acts, 54, 166

blasphemous thoughts, 16-17, 66, 68, 83-4, 114, 117

breathing out, 66-7, 87-8, 121 n.

ceremonials, 16-17, 54, 87, 114, 261

piety, 8, 16-17, 56, 85, 98-9, 114-17, 261

Obsessional neurosis and hereditary factors, 21-2, 56

Obsessional—cont.

and sense of coincidence, 239-40

doubt in, 75

hysteria at root of, 75

in 'Wolf Man', 8, 16-17, 22, 61-72, 66-7, 96, 113-14, 121 n.

sodomy and association with, 41, 56, 63-4, 72, 117, 131, 182

Obstinacy and anle erotism, 127, 130

Occam’s razor, 53 n. 2

Ochsenstein, von, brothers, 147-8, 150

O’Donovan, J. F., 170

Oedipus, 186 n. 1, 231

Oedipus complex, 6, 119, 186, 192-3, 195, 198-9, 203-4, 261-2

‘complete’, 6, 102 n. 2

negative, 5

nucleus of neurosis, 193, 261

positive, 87

Offenbach, J., 227

Olympia (in Hoffmann's Sand-Man), 227, 229-31, 232 n.

Omnipotence of thoughts, 139, 240, 241 n., 243-4, 246-7, 250

Opposite, representation by, 94-5, 95, 99, 102, 110-12, 117

Oral phase, 5-6, 64, 106-8

Orderliness and anal erotism, 127

Organic illness and neurosis, 163

Overcompensation, 41-2, 107

Overdetermination, 56

Paralysis as symptom, in war neuroses, 212

Paranoia, 84, 195, 209, 261

Parents and children (see also Oedipus complex), 32, 261

Passive sexual aim (see also Active and passive: Masochism) 24-8, 64-5, 69, 78, 81, 110, 112, 117

and beating-phantasies, 190, 194, 198-9, 202-3

and defaecation during sexual excitement, 81, 109

as result of seduction, 24-5, 27, 46, 94, 108-9

in women, 194

Pasteur, 30

Psycho- (see Preconscious system)

Penis

equated with baby, 84, 128-9, 132-3

Phobia, 39, 112

Psychic analysis, 241-2
Penis—cont.
equated with faeces, 84, 128, 131–133
function of, and sexual researches of children, 133
identification with own, 102
phantasy of being bitten on, 26, 46–7, 63 n. 2
Penis-envy in women, 129–32
converted into wish for baby, 132
converted into wish for a man, 123, 132
regression to, 130
Perversity, 177, 181–2, 191–3, 196–197, 203
infantile, 181, 192, 194
Phantastics
anagogic, 102
ana-erotic, 128
and symptom-formation, 103 n.
and the uncanny, 236, 249
beating, 26, 46–7, 63, 179–204
castration symbolized by blindness in, 231
infantile, 49–51
masochistic, 26, 109, 196–7, 199
of puberty, 19
of re-birth, 100–3
of return to womb, 100–3, 244, 248
primal, 5, 40 n. 1, 49–60, 95–7, 102–3, 120 n. 1, 121 n.
and ‘Wolf Man’s’ scene with
Grusha, 41–2, 64, 78, 82, 101
as phantasy derived from observation of animals, 57–9, 95–7, 121 n.
castration complex derived from, 45–7, 67, 78, 88
interruption of, by defaecation, 37–8
pathogenic effect of, on ‘Wolf Man’, 43–5, 47, 55, 101
posture of parents in (see Colitus a turgro)
represents sexual satisfaction from father, 41–2, 64, 78, 82, 101
witnessed by ‘Wolf Man’, 36–42, 55–6, 61, 67, 70, 71–80, 97–8, 101, 107–9, 120
witnessed in childhood, 4, 38 n., 45 n.
Primitive man, 242, 247, 249, 262–3
and animals, 140
narcissism of, 139, 235, 240
Projection, 37 n. 5, 236, 240
Psychiatry and psycho-analysis, 172–173
Psycho-analysis
and art, 173
and ethology, 262
philosophy, 105–6, 173, 274–275
Phygogenetic inheritance, 86, 97, 103 n., 119–21, 193, 203–4, 261–2
Phytic (see Obsessional piety)
Phyric, narcissistic origin of, 88
Pleasure principle, 159
Polycrates, 239, 246
‘Power, will to’, 22–3, 137
Preconscious system, 105
Pregenital organization (see also
Oral phase; Sadistic-anausal organization), 25, 63–4, 107–8, 127, 130–1, 133
Pregnancy symbols, 155, 155 n. 2
Presbythetical, 86, 262–3
Presentments in obsessional neurosis, 239–40
Primal horde, 262
Primal scene
and primal phantasy, 5, 40 n. 1, 49–60, 95–7, 102–3, 120 n. 1, 121 n.
and ‘Wolf Man’s’ scene with
Grusha, 41–2, 64, 78, 82, 101
as phantasy derived from observation of animals, 57–9, 95–7, 121 n.
castration complex derived from, 45–7, 67, 78, 88
interruption of, by defaecation, 37–8
pathogenic effect of, on ‘Wolf Man’, 43–5, 47, 55, 101
posture of parents in (see Colitus a turgro)
represents sexual satisfaction from father, 41–2, 64, 78, 82, 101
witnessed by ‘Wolf Man’, 36–42, 55–6, 61, 67, 70, 71–80, 97–8, 101, 107–9, 120
witnessed in childhood, 4, 38 n., 45 n.
Primitive man, 242, 247, 249, 262–3
and animals, 140
narcissism of, 139, 235, 240
Projection, 37 n. 5, 236, 240
Psychiatry and psycho-analysis, 172–173
Psycho-analysis
and art, 173
and ethology, 262
philosophy, 105–6, 173, 274–275
Psycho-analysis—cont.
and psychiatry, 172–3
and religion, 173, 261–3
and universities, 171–3
construction in, 50–2
depths, 48–9
for the poorer classes, 167–8
of children, 9, 183
resistance to findings of, 9, 48–9, 52–4, 136–44
teaching of, 171–3
therapeutic aspect of, 10, 118, 139–9, 183, 207, 257
time limit to, 5, 10–11, 11 n. 1, 12
Psycho-analytic technique, 5, 11–13, 19, 50, 52, 158–68, 208, 270
abstinence and, 162–3
active, 158, 162–6
time-limit and, 5, 10–12
Psychoses (see also Dementia praecox; Insanity; Manic-depressive insanity; Melancholia; Paranoia; Schizophrenia), 260, 275
Puberty, 22, 41, 45 n., 69, 98, 106, 117–18, 191, 195, 239–40
masochistic and, 195
phantasies of, 19
Punishment, desire for (see also
Guilt, sense of), 28, 46, 163, 189
Pushkin, 23 n.
Putnam, J. J. (see also Bibliography), 165, 271
Pygmalian, 246
Pythagoras, 140
Rank, Frau Dr., 230 n.
‘Hat Man’, the, 75 n. 2, 239, 240 n. 2
Reaction-formation, 181–2
Reading and phantasy, 180–1
Reality (see also External world)
flight from, 53–5, 100
psychical and material, 244–5, 248–51
sense of, in dreams, 33–4, 51
Reality-testing, 246–9
Re-birth, phantasies of, 100–3
Red Riding-Hood, 25, 50–3, 40
Regression, 25–6, 46–7, 55, 81, 106, 128–31, 193–4
Regressive character of phantasies, 49–50, 53–4, 57, 59, 189–90, 195, 190–200
Reik, T., (see also Bibliography), 221, 258, 262–3
Religion (see also Obsessional blasphemous thoughts; Obsessional piety)
ambivalence of, 65–6, 116
and death, 242
and psycho-analysis, 173, 261–3
criticism of, by ‘Wolf Man’, 62–8, 115–17
Repeat, compulsion to, 218, 234, 245
Repetition and the uncanny, 234, 236–8, 241, 243, 246, 248, 252
Repression
Adler’s view of, 110–11, 177–8, 201–3
and bisexuality, 6, 110, 200–2
and dreams, 79
and perversion, 181–2
and phantasies, 50, 189–91, 196, 199
and the uncanny, 235 n. 2, 241–2, 245, 247–9, 251–2
as reaction to trauma, 210
as return to instinctive stage, 120
Flies’ view of, 200–1
manifested by contrariety, 87
mechanism of, 79–80, 176, 194
motives for, 110–11, 177–8, 200–3
of anal-erotic impulses, 127
of castration complex, 84, 86
of homosexual impulses (see Homosexuality)
of incestuous impulses, 188–31, 193, 196, 199
of penis-envy, 129
psycho-analysis undoes the work of, 138, 159, 162
relation to sublimation, 182
sexualization of, 200–4
symbolization a result of, 67
Resistance
doubt as weapon of, 75–6, 153
to analysis, 11–12, 43 n., 75, 91, 94, 153, 159, 161–2, 179
to findings of psycho-analysis, 9, 48–9, 52–4, 136–44
Retrospective phantasies, 59, 95, 103 n.
Reversal in dreams, 34–5, 42 n.
Rhamphastes (in Herodotus), 246, 252
Reynard the Fox, 25
GENERAL INDEX

302  Unconscious motives in war neuroses, 212-13

192-90, 193-6, 198-200, 202-4

171-3

81, 92, 93, 96

47, 79-8, 84, 131, 133

Veil as symbol, 75, 99-101, 101 n.

Verbal bridges, 74 n. 1 and 2, 82 n. 1, 87 n. 2, 90

and story-books, 15-16, 29-33, 39-41

and war-dream, 109, 121

as fear of castration, 96, 112-13

as fear of father, 32, 34, 46-7, 59, 106-7, 112-14

as revival of, at school, 39-40

and primal scene, 37, 41, 45-6, 56, 70, 78, 80

beats a snake to pieces, 25, 46
death of, 73, 83
equated with God, 65-6, 114-15
equated with wolf, 32, 34, 40, 46-51, 59, 106-7, 112-14
illness of, 8, 13, 17

identified with, 27, 63, 67, 107-8

death-wish against, 87

death of, 73, 83

as fear of castration, 96, 112-13

as fear of father, 32, 34, 46-7, 59, 106-7, 112-14

as revival of, at school, 39-40

and primal scene, 37, 41, 56, 62, 78, 80

beats a snake to pieces, 25, 46
death of, 73, 83
equated with God, 65-6, 114-15
equated with wolf, 32, 34, 40, 46-51, 59, 106-7, 112-14
illness of, 8, 13, 17

identified with, 27, 63, 67, 107-8

death-wish against, 87

death of, 73, 83

as fear of castration, 96, 112-13

as fear of father, 32, 34, 46-7, 59, 106-7, 112-14

as revival of, at school, 39-40

as fear of father, 32, 34, 40, 46-7, 59, 106-7, 112-14

as revival of, at school, 39-40